THE ROGUE, OR THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF Guzman de Alfarache.

LONDON,
Printed by *Henry Hills*, in the year MDCLV.

THE ROGUE: OR, The ſecond part of the Life of GUZMAN de *Alfarache.*

The firſt Book.

CHAP. I.

What befell Guzman *from the time that he ſerved his Maſter the Lord Embaſſadour, till he left* Rome.

AT that time as I ſerved my Lord Embaſſadour, I was his Favourite, and as it were the apple of his eye; I ſerved him as a merry companion, and could make him laugh at my pleaſant and witty conceits; and I can Aſſure thee, that any other corporal labour would have been of leſſe trouble unto me:

for to utter pleaſant conceits, witty jeſts, and to give a frump, or a flout with a grace, that it may take handſomely, there muſt be many things concurre.

Hereunto will be required a particular gift of nature, which ſhall give credit and grace thereunto, with a joynt conjuncture in the carriage of the countenance, ſhape and motion of the body and eye, alſo a continual reading, to know how, and when, and from what he is to form his conceit. He hath likewiſe need of a ſtrong memorie.

He muſt take a great deal of care in the enquiry of thoſe things that are moſt worthy the reproving of other mens lives, and moſt of all, in thoſe that are moſt Noble. For, neither making of faces, freeneſſe of tongue, geſtures of body, life and quickneſs of the eye, nor all the skill and wit in the world ſhall be available to move the mind, if they be not ſeaſoned with pepper and ſalt.

Tarts jeſts take beſt. That little touch of tartneſſe, that corn of ſalt, thoſe drops of Vinegar, are thoſe which give a good reliſh, and a pleaſant farewel to all the reſt, be it never ſo ſimple, never ſo unſavoury. Thoſe endowments which nature had denied me, I was forc'd to make good by tricks and devices, having (God he knowes) no learning at all.

In thoſe my yonger dayes, and in that ſpring-time of my flouriſhing years, all went currently with me; all that I did became me well, and to all did I fit and apply my ſelf.

Guzman *the onely man with his Maſter.* For theſe, and other the like things annexed thereunto, I was alwayes well clad, much made of, I was the Favourite, the familiar Friend, the Maſter of my Maſter, as alſo of thoſe that were intereſſed in his friendſhip.

I was the principal door whereby they entred into his grace and favour, and only I the *LORD* of his will. I kept the golden key of his secrets.

Conceive not this opinion of me, that I go about to tax those Princes, that keep Fools and Jesters in their Palaces, for their entertainment, and pleasure.

A short Tale of a Nobleman that was much given to lying.

A certain Noble-man, that was exceedingly given to lying, one day talking in conversation with divers other Gentleman of quality, told them, that he had kild a Stag, bearing so many branches or Antlers on his head, that it did plainly appear to be a lie, though he carried it very handsomely. They all admired it, they said; (but not gainsaid it) that it was one of the strangest things that ever was seen, or heard of. Why (quoth an ancient Gentleman, a near kinsman of his, after a pretty kind of fashion bringing it forth;) doth your Lordship and these Gentlemen make such a wonder at this? This is nothing, my *Lord*; For, within these few daies I my selfe did kill one in the same Forest, that had two more than this that you talk of.

When he heard him say so, the Noble-man blest himself, saying; It is not possible: and looking angerly upon him, said unto him; Sir, speak no more of this, tell it no further for it is such a thing as was never yet seen, nor will I for my part ever believe it.

The Gentleman with a stern countenance, and undaunted courage, boldly said, Zownds (my *Lord*) me thinks your *Lordship* should content your self, that you have sixty thousand Crownes a year coming in more than I, without seeking to out-strip me in lying, as you do in living, let me (I

pray) though I am a poor man) lie as I list: I beg nothing of you, nor any man elſe; nor do I rob any man, either of his wealth, or his honour.

My Maſter took pleaſure in hearing me, and liked me for ſomething elſe too beſides my talk.

He was very diſcreet, of a ſettled and well-compoſed behaviour, vertuous, courteous, well-ſtudied, and a great lover of thoſe that had in them ſuch commendable parts of learning as were worthy the recommendation. He was endued with all thoſe good qualities, which were to be required in a perſon of his place and imployment; he was like a goodly room, furniſhed with all thoſe rich ornaments which might ſet it forth, and make it appear fair and beautiful in the eyes of the beholders, but in the midſt thereof, even in the very beſt part of all the room, there was a choak-pear ſown and grown up, which did much blemiſh it. He was an *Enamorado*. one that was over head and ears in love. For there is no fleſh ſo ſound, that hath not ſome corruption; nor no body ſo free, that hath not ſome one infirmity or other. And his was, that he did but love too well; yea, even to exceſſe. Many wiſe men have ſaid, that a man cannot be abſolutely perfect, unleſſe he have once in his life-time been in love.

He had one ill quality, which did drown all the reſt.

A Tale of a Crier.

And of this opinion it ſeemeth, was that pleaſant-conceited Countrey fellow, that was the common Crier in his Pariſh, who having often cried an Aſſe that another Countrey fellow had loſt, did earneſtly intreat him, that he would do him the kindneſſe to crie him once more upon the Sunday following, after high maſſe was ended; and if he ſhould chance to hear any tidings of his Aſſe, he would for his labour give him a little

young

young fat Pig that he had at home.

The knave Crier greedy of the Pig, did as he had requeſted him, And all the people being met together in the market-place, he ſtood in the midſt thereof, and cry'd out with a loud voice; To all manner of people that are dwellers in this Town, or borderers thereabout, be it known, that if there be any man or woman, that hath never yet been in love, let them come in, and tell me their name, and they ſhall have a fine young Pig for their labour. And God ſave the King.

There was leaning againſt the wall of the Council houſe, a lubberly lad of ſome two and twenty years of age, with long ſhag hair, a ruſſet Caſſock one his back, welted with the ſame cloth, open about the ſhoulders, and cloſe before; Breeches of white cotton Bayes, gathered and plaited beneath at the knees, a Shirt with a band thereunto, ſo hard quilted throughout the ſtock, that a Turkiſh bow with a very ſharp arrow was not able to peirce it; a poor thread-bare Cloak; a pair of high ſhooes of Neats-leather, knit together with two ſtrings of twiſted Hemp, and bare-legged, who coming in all haſte to the Crier, in his clowniſh kinde of language ſaid unto him; Brother *Sanz*, give me the Pig: for by theſe ten bones I vow unto yon, that I was never yet in love, never had my head puzzled with it, nor ever paid any Tole to that Mill.

Then the Crier calling the owner of the beaſt in all haſte, and pointing to this Chop-loch with his finger, ſaid unto him, *Anton Berrocal*, give me my Pig, and take you here your Aſſe.

By this then we may ſee, how much it may import a man to love. Miſtake me not; I *Touching Love.*

mean, when the ends are good, and honeſt.

But in my Maſter it was taken in the worſer part; for his ends did exceed and paſſe their bounds; and the blame of all that ill was laid upon me: every man conceiving, that I was the cauſe thereof: Complaining, that ſince I came to ſerve him, I had opened his ſcull, and put into his head nothing but Hawks-bells and Rattles; all that he took delight in, were merry tales, idle jeſts, and the like vanities. But for to ſpeak the truth (ſeeing the Parties are not here to be examined, and I am the man whom they thus accuſe) I aſſure you, that others had the handling of him before, that wrought him this harm.

For when I entred into his ſervice, and that he came to put his cure into my hands, the Phyſicians deſpaired of his recovery, and had given him quite over; I will not deny, but by reaſon I was in ſuch favour with him, I had likewiſe the freedome to uſe many old fooliſh jeſts.

Guzmans *courſe of life in* Rome.

I was familiarly acquainted with all *Rome*, I had as free acceſs into every houſe, as into our own, excuſing my pretenſions, that I only repaired to ſuch and ſuch places, to give leſſons to ſome to ſing to the Gitern, and teach other ſome to dance.

I did entertain your young Wenches in good converſation with merry and pleaſant jeſts; and your widowes, with whiſpering tales in their ears; and entering into a league of friendſhip with your married-men, I got likewiſe the good will of their wives, to whom they would bring me to laugh and make ſport, wherewith they were well pleaſed, for the good contentment they took in my harmleſſe mirth.

And all this I did, to the end, that from this

good

good ground, my maſter might take occaſion to declare and open himſelf more freely to me. For I relating unto him, What, and how things paſſed abroad, it was an eaſie matter for me to kindle with the breath of my words, the fire that was in his heart.

I do ingenuouſly confeſſe, that I was an inſtrument of his exceſſes and flying out; what other good can be expected from your neat Pages? what do your Princes witty Jeſters, and your Great mens Dwarfes ſerve for, but to talk with Ladies and Gentle-woman, and to endear unto them their Maſters love? And it ſtands to good reaſon, that a light mother ſhould breed a looſe daughter. And if ſhe love to have her train plaid withal, that her daughter will prove a Wagtaile.

By this you may ſee, what obligations Parents have to look well unto their Children: let them conſider, how much better it were, that their Wives, Siſters, and Daughters, ſhould rather learn to handle their Needle, than to play on the Gittern; to govern well, rather then to dance well.

It was not good, I confeſſe, that I ſhould be a Bawd to my Maſter: but every man would fain live. And this Office I performed by thoſe tricks and devices I told you of before, taking occaſion by my familiar and general acquaintance in *Rome*, to go as boldly into every mans houſe, as I would into mine own, excuſing this liberty of mine, by thoſe pretenſions I made, of teaching ſome to play upon inſtruments, and ſome to dance; entertaining in the mean while Maidens with merriments; Widowes, with old wives tales and what was whiſpered abroad; and entering into amity

with

with married men, good honeſt kind Cuckolds.

But I was in ſome ſort to be excuſed, for that my wants andneceſſity drave me to do as I did, and what I did herein, was to wedge my Maſters affection unto me, and to work my ſelf into his favour, both which I came to be poſſeſt of.

Women that entertain chat with your crack-rope Pages, with your giddy headed Poets, that never go without a Musk-Comfet in their mouth, or chewing the rinde of a Lemmon; with your flat-Capt Citizens, yout Countrey Lads, and the like; ſome perhaps may hold them diſcreet; but I am ſure they loſe the name of chaſt.

Now the profit that I made by this occupation, trading with this perſon, and with that, with t'other and t'other, this my converſation being ſo generall, it was the onely means, that kept me from being diſcovered to be a Bawd.

The greateſt puniſhment that lighted then upon me was; that my hayrs began to ſprout, and my Chinn to put on a beard, the which the more I ſhav'd becauſe I would not have it perceiv'd, the thicker it came, and grew the faſter. And for that it is a peculiar Office belonging to handſome and witty Pages, to be *Venus* and *Cupids* chiefeſt Miniſters, the more diligence I uſed in tricking, adorning, trimming, and ſetting my ſelf forth in laſcivious manner, the more occaſion I gave the world thereby to talk and judg of me accordingly. I ſtudyed to be neat and handſome in my clothes, but took no heed how foul the faſhion of my behaviour was; and therefore it was no marvell if they threw durt upon me with their tongues. In a word every one would beſtow upon, and force me to wear his Livery, you know what

I mean; and though I told them they lyed like a company of Rogues and Villains as they were, they would laugh and hold their peace, giving by this their myſtical kind of ſilence, a more open way unto the truth. Their taunts againſt me were true, and ſtrook deep; whatſoever I reply'd upon them, they made but a jeſt of it; my words were but as the picking of ſtraws, theirs as the peircing of Darts.

I was not able to ſtand againſt ſo many; I ſaw they had reaſon on their ſide, and therefore I was willing to be huſh, and to pocket up theſe wrongs with patience;

And (making a vertue of neceſſity) I was forced to paſs over all theſe bobs and jerks they had at me, ſometimes with a ſmile, ſometimes a jeſt, and ſometimes with both.

In concluſion, I ſaw I could not well be worſe thought of than I was already, and therefore caſting aſide all thought of amendment, I counted it a credit unto me, and took rather a pride in it than otherwiſe, and ſo making light of it, and jeſting it out, I did ſet a good face on the matter.

So that by this they perſecuted me the leſs, and I paſt the more quietly along by them. If I ſhould have attempted any other way to pacifie them, I ſhould never have been able to do it; and ſhould thereby have but made the fire more to flame, by ſeeking to aſſwage it with Flax and Rozin.

Let him therefore, whoſoever will take upon him to ſet open a ſhop to Vice, provide himſelf of a *Tortoyſe* ſhell, arm his back with patience, and keep his ears, and his mouth ſhut. And let not any man flatter himſelf, that having foul conditions he ſhall get him a fair report.

My

A Tale of two Gentlemen, that dined with the French Embassadour.

My Lord the Embassadour (as you have already heard) kept a free Table, was rich, and took great pleasure in keeping a good house; And because all guests do not alwayes give content, it one day happened, that he made a feast for the Spanish Embassadour, and amongst divers other Gentlemen, their came two to dinner unto him, that were principall persons, the one a Captain, the other, a Doctor of Law: but to his Lordship both troblesome and wearisome alike, for the great pleasure that they took to hear themselves talk. Of whose impertinences, and frivolous discourses, my Lord had in private some speech with me heretofore.

My Master would fain have rid his hands of them, and have shak'd them off but he could not; for that they met him in the street in his way homeward, and would needs wait on him to his house; as men that did much honour his Lordship, and did owe him a great deal more service, than this their willing attendance upon his person, whereunto they owed all respect. So that my Lord (being so noble a Gentleman as he was) was driven by force to invite them to stay dinner, who had, as it were, by force accompanied him to his house.

As soon as I saw my Lord enter within the gates, I perceived presently by his countenance, that something, whatever it were, did trouble him. I looked earnestly upon him, and he understood my meaning. He told me what it was, (speaking unto me with his eyes, by casting them upon those two Gentlemen) and I needed no farther instruction to direct me what I had to doe.

I beginning to cast about with my self, what course

ourſe I were beſt to take, to make thoſe men who had ſo diſtaſted my Maſter) a ſport and laughing-ſtock to all the reſt of the company, and ſo to make them pay dearly for their dinner.

Nor did I take much pains in the finding of it out; Only I expected a fit occaſion, to ſet it before them which was now near at hand. But I did reſerre it, till the laſt courſe ſhould be ſerved in, and almoſt ended, that it might take the better. The Cloth was laid, meat on the boord, the Gueſts were merry, healths went round, and when I ſaw their blouds grew warm, and that they were ſet upon the merry pin, talking and laughing on all hands, ſome of one thing, ſome of another, a little before they were to waſh, the Towell being not yet thrown on the boord, nor the Baſon and Ewer ſet down, I came cloſe to the Captains ſide, and rounding him in the eare, told him a notable *non ſequitur*; He laught heartily at it; and being bound to requite me with another, made me bend down my head towards his boſome, that he might the better tell it me in mine eare, and ſo in ſecret, we made two or three paſſages one upon another; and when I ſaw my time, and that it ſerved fit for my purpoſe, I began to raiſe my voyce a note higher, and with a cheereſull look, ſmiling merrily upon him, (as if we had talked all this while of that which I ſhall now tell you, when (God he knowes) we had never a word of any ſuch matter) I told him, No, my *Sennor Capitan*, no, you ſhall pardon me, I will not; if your Worſhip will vent it your ſelf, you may better do it than I, for you have a good tongue to put it home, and a better arme to maintain it. I will hatch none of your eggs (good Captain) forth with them

them your self. For these are no fit and savory Jests, for such a poor Youth as I am, and being so great a servant of Master Doctors, as no man in the world can be more.

With that, my Master, and all the rest of the Guests besides, began to cry out unto me at once, How now *Guzmanillo*, whats the matter? I know not Sir, unless my noble Captain here long to see my Crown shaven, and to have me to take my Degrees, which it seems, he would fain have me to do, seeking to set the Doctor and me together by the ears, and put us to the paring of each others nayles, till we be both toucht to the quick.

The Captain, when he heard me say so, was frost-bitten, and marvelling what the mystery of this roguerie should be, suspected there was some knavery in it, though he knew not what. And not knowing what to do, fell a laughing, without speaking any one word at all.

But the Spanish Embassadour call'd unto me, and said, Friend *Guzman*, now by my life, you shall not smother it; what's the matter I prethee? Let us know of thee, why at one and the self same time, thou laugheſt, and yet seemest angry? it must needs be some good conceit or other and therefore out with it.

Seeing your Lordship hath laid down so great a pawn as your life, I shall (though loth, and much against my will) tell you what it is; and I protest unto your Lordship, that I had rather have held my peace, and had you not sworn by your life, I would sooner have had my tongue drawn backwards out of the nape of my neck, than to utter the least syllable of that which I shall fully deliver unto you. Your Lordship shall therefore under-

derſtand, that my Captain here laid his Command poa me, that I would break a jeſt upon this Doctor, my worthy and noble friend; girding at the cut of his beard; for he ſaith that the faſhion of his beard is juſt for all the world like one of thoſe upon your Flemmiſh Iugges, and that a nights he puts it in a Preſs, made of two thinne Trenchers cru'd wonderful cloſe, that no Gittern can be cloſer ſhut up in it's Caſe, that it may come forth the next morning with even corners, bearing in groſs the form of a Broom, narrow above, and broad beneath, his Muchatoes Ruler wiſe, ſtraight and level as a line; and all the other hairs, as juſt & as even as a Privet hedg, newly cut; anſwering each other in an uniform manner, having the point thereof in form of a Quadrant, drawn neatly out, that it might make the fairer and larger ſhew. For ſuch a goodly Beard accompanied with a Roman Bonnet, (like your Briefs and your Largs in a Singing mans Book,) doth grace his leſſer and groſſer parts. As if this were ſufficient to make him be held a great Scholar; as if this fair out-ſide were a qualification for him; as if men had not ſeen your *Cavalles Argeles*, ſome horſes with one onely white foot on the farr ſide behind, having all the other parts of their body of another colour, and yet came of a very good race. And ſome great Block-heads, (though bred up in Vniverſities,) whoſe ignorance is a great deal larger than their Gowns; being like herein unto ſome kind of Melons, which cozen us with the glorioufneſs of their colour, ſeeming to be good Melons to the ſhow, but indeed are worſe than Pompions; no ſtuff, no goodneſs in them. And this was it which my Captain would have had me ſaid, as from my ſelf.

And

And this was it which made me cry, No no; and that he ſhould tell it himſelf, and he would, for I would none of it. This is all, my Lord: if there be more behind, your Lordſhip may be pleaſed to lay your Comand on the Captain, who (I know) will be ready in this, or any thing elſe, to do your Worſhip ſervice.

The Captain bleſt himſelf, when he ſaw whither I had driven the nayl, wondring at this my ſubtilneſs of wit, and cunning conveyance, himſelf and all the reſt of the company laughing at it.

But my Doctor, having his head well warmed with Wine, knew not whether he were beſt to be angry, or to turn it to a jeſt: But all eyes being fixed on him, he pawſed a while and carrying a countenance betwixt anger and ſhame, at laſt he vented himſelf, and ſpake thus unto them.

My Lord, if my profeſſion would permit it, that I ſhould give my ſelf that ſatisfaction, which ſuch an impudencie as this deſerveth, your Lordſhip might eaſily believe, that I would comply with that obligation, wherein I ſtand bound to my progenitours, and the honour of my Houſe;

But being that your Lordſhips preſence doth priviledge this inſolent boldneſs, and that this place will afford me no other weapons than my tongue, your Lordſhip may be pleaſed to give me leave to demand of this Captain, How old he is? For if that be true which he ſayes, that he ſerved the Emperour, *Charles* the firſt, in his Warres, being with him at the battell of *Tunez*, how comes it to paſs that he hath never a white haire in all his beard, nor black one in his head? And if he be ſo young, as he would ſeem to be, why doth he ſay, that he was preſent with him, at ſuch

and

an ancient piece of ſervice, and ſo long agoe as as that was? Let him tell us, I pray, in what *Jordan* he hath waſhed, or to what Saint recommended himſelf: to the end that we may all offer up Tapers to his ſhrine, and have recourſe unto him for help, when we ſhall have the like need. Let him firſt declare this, and then let him goe on with his game, and I will play mine as well as I can. And ſince he hath firſt trumped about, let us try, who can ſooneſt beat out one another, and winne more Tricks: For there is no reaſon he ſhould ſo carry it away, nor ſhall he get any thing by his croſſing of me, while I have a trump in mine hand.

All the whole boord fell a laughing a freſh, but eſpecially my Maſter, for that two things were then treated, which of all other he did hate and deteſt, and deſired the reformation of them, as no man more.

And having will obſerved all that had paſſed herein, he ſaid unto me; Now tell me *Guzmanillo*, what thou doeſt think of this? Since thou haſt propoſed the Argument, I will have thee to reſolve the Queſtion. I then told him, All the anſwer that I can make your Lordſhip, is onely this: That they have both ſaid Truth, and yet both of them Lye in their beards.

The conceit conſiſts in the word Lye; for that they did colour the hairs of their Beards with Lees made of purpoſe for that uſe.

Chap. II.

The Doctor would be reveng'd of Guzman. *The Spaniſh Embaſſadour takes up the quarrell.*

THey did all highly commend the jeſt, and ſome did indear it to farre, that the Doctor thereby was the more enraged, inſomuch that they were ſorry they had preſt it ſo farr, and given it ſo great an applauſe.

But the Embaſſadour of Spain, through his great wiſdome, threw in his *Warder*, and took up the quarrell, making it (by his diſcreet handling of the matter) a merry meeting onely of friends, where no exception was to be taken at any thing that ſhould merrily paſs amongſt them.

The Captain was a good-natur'd man, well behav'd, an old beaten Souldier, and a good fellow, who laugh't heartily at it, let it paſs as a jeſt, and bleſſed himſelf, vowing and proteſting that he never ſpake any one ſuch word unto me, nor was it ever in his thought to touch upon any ſuch point. And though he were nipt, yet becauſe he was a diſcreet Gentleman and a Souldier, (amongſt whom now and then jeſts are broken, as well as Lances) he ſet light by it.

But when the Doctor certainly knew, that I had been the onely Author of all this miſchief, he did ſet upon me in that fierce and terrible manner, that he did cut his words with his teeth, not being able to pronounce them plain, through his eagerneſs, and heat of choler. And he would fain hav:

have risen from the table to have had me by the ears, but they would not suffer him so to do.

And seeing he could not be revenged on me as he would; and having no other weapon to beat me withal but his tongue, he roundly laid about him, and letting the reigns loose to his rage, he bestowed his livery upon me, calling me by all the vile names that he was able to reckon up; whereof I made little reckoning, but did rather help him on, by teaching him what he should say.

This madded him more than all the rest, to see me thus mock and scoff at all that he said, which made him break out worse than before, and to grow far more violent and outragious with me. For, as if this bitter jest had been some Excommunication, that by a joint consent, and general Council as it were, had gone out against him, and that every one of us had a finger therein, he cared not whom he paid; and almost, nay, more then almost (if my Master had not stopt him in this furious course) this business had grown exceeding foul.

The French Ambassadour seeks to pacifie the Doctor.

He sought to pacifie him with the best reasons he could then use unto him, as one that would fain turn the Water another way, and divert these his evil intentions towards me; which that he might the better do, he began to shuffle the Cards anew; and to cut off all that former offensive conversation, he began a story, and said,

A Tale of divers and sundry accidents of Love.

The Constable of *Castile*, *Don Alvaro de Luna*, in the time of his greatest greatness, residing in *Valladolid*, having one day entertained himself in a pleasant Garden, neer to the River *Pisuerga*, recreating himself in beholding the variety of Walks, the beautiful Flowers, the delicate Ar-

bours, the ſhady Trees, and ſavourie Fruits, was reſolved to remain there, and to take his full pleaſure of that place untill the heat ſhould be overpaſt.

And that he might the better in the mean while paſs away the time, he intreated two Gentlemen that accompanied him thither, the one *Don Luys de Caſtro*, and the other, *Don Rodrigo de Montalvo*, that each of them would tell him ſom Loveſtory. He very well knew, that theſe two Gentlemen were the onely Gallants then in Court, and great Lovers of Ladies, being both of them, beſides Noble in their Name and Blood, diſcreet, valiant, active in their perſons, of fair both feature and behaviour, curious in their cloaths, witty in their jeſts, un-offenſively pleaſant, in a word, ſo generally well-qualified, and ſo adorned with all thoſe ornaments that might grace either their ſpeech or their actions, that they were very well able to give him that ſatisfaction upon this ſubject, as more could not be deſired. And the better to animate them on, he promiſed, in reward, a rich Diamond Ring, to him, whoſe tale, for the ſtrangeneſs of the ſucceſs, ſhould beſt deſerve it. *Don Luys de Caſtro* was firſt to begin, and thus he proceeded.

Don Luys de Caſtro *his Loveſtory.*

I loved a certain Lady of this Kingdom, a Virgin, as fair and beautiful, as ſhe was diſcreet and honeſt; I ſerved her many years; I ran at the Ring, maintained Turneys, and Tiltings, ordained Royal Feaſts, and Maskes, and what not for her ſake? the eys of my ſoul were never off her, but ſtill waited upon her: ſhe was the ſole Miſtris of my heart, for her ſake onely I invented all theſe honorable pleaſures, and delightful entertainments.

Upon theſe kinds of Feaſts and ſports, I ſpent ſo much, ſelling away my poſſeſſions, that I might compaſs the poſſeſſion of her. My

My Father (it is well known) left me wonderful rich, both in goods and lands, but in ſhort, I ſent it packing. In the end, I became ſo poor, that your Lordſhips favour is the only prop that doth uphold me, and though this be none of the leaſt griefs, to ſee a Gentleman to become poor and needy, that neceſſity muſt ty him to ſerve, who was wont heretofore to be ſerved (yet I acknowledge it a happineſs unto me, that I am your Lordſhips ſervant.)

My Miſtreſs, in recompence of my conſtant love, plighted me her faith and troth. But whether theſe were the words of a woman, or the words of my ſhort fortunes; un-mindeful of all thoſe vows and proteſtations that had paſt between us, ſhe ſcorning my poor condition maried another.

I do not think that either *Don Rodrigo*, or any other Gentleman whatſoever, can inſtance a more misfortune than this of mine: for that loving her with that firmneſs and conſtancy (as I did) and ſerving her with that love and faithfulneſs (as none poſſibly could be more;) I loſt my time, I loſt my means, & at laſt I loſt my Miſtreſs. Only there is left this Ring, by way of reward.

Don Rodrigo de Montalvo ſaid.

The Ring (*Don Luys*) is none of yours, I ought of right to have it. And turning himſelf towards the Conſtable, ſaid,

Moſt Noble Sir, Though I confeſs that to be true which *Don Luys* hath delivered unto your Lordſhip, for that I was an eye-witneſs of all this buſineſs, he hath no reaſon to pretend the Diamond; for if he would but free himſelf of paſſion, he would judge this cauſe in my favour, for thus (may it pleaſe you to give me the hearing) did things paſs.

Not long ago, there came to *Don Luys* an antient Servant belonging to this Gentlewoman his Miſtriſs, from whom he ſecretly delivered him a Letter. He opened, read it, and gave it me, that I likewiſe might peruſe it; the ſum whereof is.

DEar Sir, you have little reaſon to accuſe me of ingratitude, though my actions did not correſpond with your deſerts, the reaſon was, becauſe they could not ſtand with that Decorum, *which was due to my Maiden-State, and the danger that might enſue thereupon. My Mariage with you (which I deſired more than I did mine own life) the obedience of a Daughter did diſturb, and the Commands and earneſt importunities of my Parents, moved thereunto by vain intereſt, and the Title of a Counteſs, forced me to yield my body unto him, to whom I could never ſurrender my ſoul. I have been yours, I am yours, and ſhall be yours all the daies of my life. I give you to underſtand, that the Count my Husband is to undertake a long journey; haſten hither unto me as ſoon as you can, and bring no other perſon along with you, ſave your Friend* Don Rodrigo; *And when you ſhall come to this Town, you ſhall find in a Hermitage adjoining thereunto, order given you for that which you are to do. Love me with all your heart (as you were wont) and as I do you, and live you as happily, as I wiſh you; concluding my Letter with dear embracements, which attend your comming.*

Don Luys read it over and over; He looked upon every line, weighed them as a man would weigh Gold; he kiſt them a thouſand and a thouſand times

times over. I heartned him on, that he ſhould haſten his departure with all poſſible ſpeed, that he might comply with that, which his Miſtreſs had given him in a Charge. This was preſently put in execution; when we came to the Hermitage, we found there, a very grave and reverend Dame, who ſtaied there, expecting our coming.

She delivered us a Meſſage, the effect whereof was this: That her Lord, the *Conde*, was gone forth upon his journey, but was now newly returned, by reaſon of a certain indiſpoſition of body that ſeized on him upon the way: But intreated us, to ſtay there, till ſhe went to acquaint her Lady the Counteſs of our comming. She went; we ſtaid; about eleven a clock at night ſhe came back again unto us, and told us, we muſt follow her. We did ſo; till ſhe brought us with much Secrecy into a lodging in the Palace, where we no ſooner were, but the Counteſs comes forth, and receives us with extraordinary tokens of joy and gladneſs. And after that ſome few ceremonies were ended, the Counteſs ſaid unto me, *Don Rodrigo*, the time that is now offered unto us, to enjoy this fair occaſion, you, in your own diſcretion may judge, how ſoon it will be gone. You know the obligation of true Friendſhip, and the firm affection which you have alwaies made ſhew to bear unto *Don Luys*; but ſay, this ſhould fail (which I no way miſdoubt) yet for my ſake, you are bound in courteſie to grant me my requeſt. You have already underſtood, how the Count my Husband returned back from his journey, ſo weary, that he preſently got him to bed, where I have left him faſt aſleep. But becauſe it may ſo fall out, that in turning or waking, he ſhould ſtretch out a leg or an arm, towards

wards that ſide of the bed, where I ly, and ſhould find my place empty, and no body there, it muſt be a great deal of danger that I muſt run, beſides the ſcandal, therefore whileſt your friend *Don Luys* and my ſelf ſhall entertain the time in talk, you would be pleaſed to go ly down in my place, that I may abide the ſafer here. And I will aſſure you on my honeſt word, that you ſhall not thereby incur any danger. For beſides that the Count is old, He is ſo tyred with his journey, and of that indiſpoſition of body at this preſent, that there is no fear that he will ſo much as but offer to ſtir, or move himſelf at all. But ſay he ſhould, and that he ſhould turn and touch you, he will not dream of any bodies being there but my ſelf.

Your Excellency may conceive how much it troubled me, that the Counteſs ſhould put me upon ſuch a perillous piece of ſervice.

I told her I would willingly do her this Service: they promiſed, nay ſwore unto me, that at the moſt ſhe ſhould not tarry away above half an hour.

The Counteſs put me into a night dreſſing and a Smock, led me along to her Chamber, and made me to ly down in her Bed. I ſofily laid my ſelf down upon the very edge and brim, as it were, of the bed, as far from the Count, as I poſſibly could deviſe, and in that manner I remained there five good long houres and more, till it was break of day.

Now let every man conſider in what a poor caſe I was, in ſuch a place as this, and at ſuch a time: I expected no leſs than death, if the Count ſhould chance to awake. For in regard that I went in thither naked, and unarmed, I muſt fight it out with my fiſts only; and admit I ſhould have ſtruggled with the

the Count, and had the Fortune to escape his hands, yet could I not those of the Servants of his House, because I knew not how, nor which way to order my flight.

But *Don Luys* and the Countess, did laugh and talk so loud, that I might hear every Word almost that they had said, as I lay in the bed, wherewith my fear was much increased, lest happily their discomposed carriage might chance to awaken the Count; and it did mightily vex me, and almost mad me.

When they saw that day was now so nigh, they came both of them laughing hand in hand to the beds side, with a light in their hand, I being frighted almost out of my little wits) where they sportingly frisked and skipped about me, making a great noise as well with their tongues as their feet.

Then I began to imagine with my self, that through too much content, they had both run mad: they drew neerer to the bed it self; and the Countess drawing the Curtain, that we might now plainly see one another, then was I quite out of my senses. For I, who had hitherto thought that I had the Count lying by me; the Countess lifting up the cloaths of the bed, cleered that errour, and gave me to understand, that it was not he, but the Countesses Sister, a pure Virgin, yet as fair as *Venus*. Whereat, as likewise the jest, I was so ashamed and dasht out of countenance, that for my life I could not speak a word, nor knew not what in the World to do, but to rise up in my Smock, and to get me over to look my clothes. Let your Excellencie therefore be pleased to consider in what danger I did put my self, and then to give your judgment which of us two doth best deserve the Ring.

The

The Constable, laughing heartily hereat, said, *Don Luys* had no reason to complain, seeing, though late, yet at length he had obtained his desire; so that he could not deserve the promised reward. And *Don Rodrigo* as little, for that the was not in any danger by sleeping with the *Count*; And therefore his Sentence was this, that neither of them deserved the Diamond; yet taking it off from his finger, he consigned it to *Don Rodrigo*, with condition that he should send it as a Token to this Gentlewoman, by whose side he lay; for that she only had incurred the danger, and had also run the hazard of her honor, if she had been known what she was.

The Courtiers highly commended the Constables Sentence, and all taking their leave of my Lord Embassador, they went whither their occasions called them.

CHAP. III.

How a Roman Matron being sollicited by Guzman *in his Lords behalf, the French Embassador, put a jest upon him.*

A story of the French Embassadors Love.

MY Lord Embassadour fell in love with a Principal Gentlewoman, nobly descended, whose name was *Fabia*; her husband a Gentleman of *Rome*, old, poor, and ill accoutred, three strong and powerful enemies against a woman that was young, fair, and well brought up. For these reasons, and by the help of a Maid of hers (which had been a Virgin) but was now my Sweet-heart, and

The greatest enemies that a fair woman hath.

nd mine own dear Love, I was verily perſwaded e ſhould eaſily get the game. Who could have loſt o fair a Set, having ſuch ſtore of found Trumps, nd other good Cards in my hand? But I had ome'erful croſs Carding, and every trick that I hid, fell out to the worſt.

When this Gentlewoman underſtood, what paſſed betwixt my ſelf and her ſervant, ſhe began to deviſe with her ſelf, how ſhe might be revenged on us both, and the plot that was laid between us, for the effecting of my Lords deſires. And this ſhe did the rather, for that ſhe ſaw, that her waiting Gentlewoman, for my ſake, did ſo earneſtly ſollicite this cauſe, and that for my intereſt, and to do me a pleaſure, ſhe did follow this buſineſs with all care and diligence, taking her fit times to put her often in mind thereof, not ſuffering a Card to paſs without a Vie, and knew handſomely how to put them home: inſomuch, that when this honourable Matron ſaw, ſhe could not be in quiet for her, but was thus hardly ſet upon in her own houſe, ſhe made no outcryes, no ſqueamiſh replies, no cunning impoſtures, but as Roman, ſo did ſhe perform a Roman Act, feigned her ſelf to be ſomewhat touched with Loves paſſion, and that ſhe was now upon the point of yeelding, if not wholly overcome.

The wickedneſs of ſome Servants.

One day, when as her Maid was making of her ready, and was inſtant with her in this buſineſs, looking upon her with a ſmiling and chearful countenance, ſhe ſaid unto her, *Nicoleta*, I aſſure thee, that if thou hadſt not wrought upon me, uſing ſo many ſtrange inventions, and hadſt not ſpent ſo many elaborate and well-ſtudied words in this ſute of thine, thou hadſt ere this made that will of mine

The diſcret carriage of a woman tempted to lewdneſs.

mine to yeeld, which hath hitherto ſtood out ſo long. For I wiſh well unto *Guzman*, and approve his diſcreet proceeding in this buſineſs. Beſides, his Maſter is of that merit, that any woman whatſoever, be ſhe of never ſo honourable quality, without being ſo much ſollicited, as I have been, ought to embrace his love and friendſhip, and offer her ſervice unto him. But as thou thy ſelf both knoweſt, and ſeeſt, I do not know how it will be poſſible, that this our Treaty ſhall be ſecure from ſcandalous tongues, being that now upon no juſt cauſe given, and I for my part having as yet yeelded no conſent unto that, which perhaps I ſo much deſire, that is whiſpered already in every corner, nay thorow all *Rome*, which neither in mine own houſe, nor with thee, (which canſt onely be the inſtrument of our pleaſure) did I ever yet communicate. And ſince it is now come to this paſs, that the popular voice runs on with great liberty, & I not able to deny the love of this noble Gentleman, all that I would intreat at thy hands, is, that thou wilt diſpoſe and order it, with the greateſt ſecrecie that may be. Speak therfore to *Guzman*, that he wait and attend hereabouts for ſome few nights, for I will find opportunity ſome one night or other, to give him entrance, that I may ſee him, and talk with him concerning the carriage of our loves.

Nicoleta fell down upon her knees to the ground, not knowing which ſhe ſhould kiſſe firſt, her feet or her hands, with a face ſet all on fire with too much joy: diſgracefully laying open the faults of her old Maſter. Then did ſhe reduce unto her remembrance thoſe former diſtaſtes which ſhe had received from him; in what wretched eſtate, through

through his misery, she lived in; his base kind of carriage, and what drie fodderings he did give her; all to encourage her the more to go bravely on in this her resolution.

Hereupon she came forthwith flying unto me, flinging her armes abroad, and strongly twining them about my neck, she clasp't me as hard as she could for her life, demanding * *Albricias* at my hands, which when she had received, she would relate unto me what had past between her and her Mistresse. I took her by the hand, leading her along with me, into my Masters withdrawing Chamber, where, with a great deal of joy we celebrate this gladsom news; plotting and contriving with our selves touching the hour, how and where I might find entrance to speak with *Fabia*. And my Master giving to *Nicoleta* a little purse which he had in his pocket, cramm'd with Spanish pistoles, she made as if she were unwilling to take them of him, but did not all this while close her fist, nor pull back her hand, but out of modesty held it between forward and backward, like a physician, when he is offered more than his fees, and with a jocund smile, gave him thanks for this his courteous liberality; and with this she took her leave both of him and me. And when it was night, at the appointed hour, I took up my standing, gave the watch-word, and made such signes as were ordered between us, but neither that night, nor some three or four more following, could this agreement made between us, take effect.

* *A reward for good news.*

One day amongst the rest there happened to fall a small, but withall a shrewd rain, wherein at my wonted hour I was to make my accustomed walk, being dabbled to the girdle, I came thither

reasonable

reasonable well wet. It was my hap to have the end of my desires. As soon as I had given the signe, it was known who was there, yet notwithstanding they made me to wait in the rain, till I was so thorow wet, that the water that came in at my poll, dropt out at my knees, and went guttering down into my shooes, and then at last, after I had been a long time in this cold bath, they called unto me, and willed me to have the patience to stay yet a little longer.

In the end, when all my cloths and my self were dung wet, and that I had not a dry thred about me, I might perceive the door to open very softly, and *Nicoleta* to call upon me. And then (me thought) that very breath which came from that voyce, brought that comfortable heat with it, that I was thorow dry all over on the sudden. *Nicoleta* and I exchanged but a few words; for she had scarce bid me welcome, when lo, her Mistris came down, and calling to her servant, said; Doe you hear (*Nicoleta* ?) Get you up, & see what your Master is a doing, and if he chance to ask for me, come and call me, whilst I in the mean while stay talking here with *Sennor Guzman*.

Now, all this *interim* we were in the dark, so that we could scarce discern one another. Then did she begin to question me concerning my health, and how it was with me. That complement performed, I delivered her a large message from my master, and how great a servant he was of hers, inlarging this Theme with an elagant Oration, which I had studied of purpose onely to this end. But when I was in the greatest force of this Argument, she seeming to be amazed, and

startled

ſtartled with ſome ſudden perturbation, abruptly ſaid unto me,

Senor Guzman, as you love my life, let me intreat you to hold me excuſed; for with a conceived fear, that at this very inſtant hath ſeized upon me, me thinks, every bodies eye is upon me, all in the houſe watch & obſerve me. And therefore for Gods ſake, let me intreat you to enter in here this way, and there right over againſt you, you ſhall find a lodging Chamber, get you quickly into that, and tarry there till I have given a turn or two about the houſe, to ſee if the coaſt be clear, and all my people ſafe, and I ſhall preſently return, again unto you; but I pray have an eſpeciall care the mean while, that you ſtand ſtill, and make not any the leaſt noyſe in the world. I gave credit unto her, and went ſtraight on as she had directed me, and thinking that I had gone athwart a little open entry, making more haſt than good ſpeed, I lighted ere I was aware into a huge beaſtly Hog-ſty, that ſtood in a filthy durty Court, where I had no ſooner gone ſome two or three ſteps, but I ſtumbled (through too much haſt) upon a great dung mixen, and fell with my head juſt againſt the wall, giving my ſelf ſuch a ſound knock, that I lay there for a while ſenſeleſſe: But with that little life that was left me, by little and little I came to my ſelf again, and ſcrambling up again as well as I could, I went groaping along the walls with my hands (as children do when they play at blind-man-buff) to ſee if I could find out this appointed Chamber; but I could find no other out-let, ſave that whereby I had made my entrance. I rounded it once againe.

Guzman *notably mocked by* Fabia, *and in what manner.*

And wandring thus up and down this Maze, it

it was my hap to light upon a little narrow lane, as it were, whereat there was no going forth, having a house of Office at the end of it, ill covered, and that not wholly neither over-head, where was onely the one half of an old broken great pitcher, which was full of Ordure, being fixed fast to the ground and beastly berayd round about, yeelding no very sweet sent, whereby *I* began to conjecture the danger *I* was in, and to consider with my self the many mis-fortunes that had befaln me.

Well, when I saw how the world went, *I* sought to get out where *I* came in: but *I* found the door was fast shut upon me, and that there was no hope of getting forth. *It* rained extremely, and showred down so fast upon me, that *I* was forced to shelter my self under that poor miserable old ruinous open. *I* cannot tell whether *I* should tearm it rather Hovell, than House, standing up to the knees in durt, whose perfume was none of the pleasantest.

There *I* did pass over the remainder of that night. Nor vvas it onely the falling of the raine, that did novv afflict me, vvhich came not drizling or mizling dovvn upon me, but vvith a full and open gutter, and, at last vvith drops as bigge as Pease: But *I* began to think vvith my self vvhat should become of me; for *I* could not but imagine, that she that had made that Mouse-trap for me over-night, vvould the next morning deliver me over to the Cat.

After this conceit had run a while in my head, I entred into the other discourses, wherewith I might comfort my self, resolving when the Master of the house shall find me here, all that I will say unto him, shall be, that his Maid brought me hither,

and

and that I am her Husband. For it would be the leſſer harm unto me to be maried unto her, than to ſee my Bones marred with torment, to make me to confeſs what I made there: and I would rather ſeek to content them with this anſwer, than they ſhould kill me.

Thus I went, beating my brains about, diſcuſſing to and fro, what would be the iſſue of this buſineſs; when lo, anon after two of the clock in the morning, I perceived that the door was opened, thinking that *Fabia* was now returned; But when I came to the door, and found it unlockt, and no body living thereabouts, I began to be more afraid than I was before; I unſheathed my Sword, and taking that in one hand, and my dagger in the other, by little and little, I got at laſt to the ſtreet door, which I likewiſe found was open.

Then I plainly perceived, that what had already paſt, was in puniſhment of my over-boldneſs. I comforted my ſelf as well as I could; I came at laſt to our own Houſe, and opening my Chamber door, I put off my cloaths, and got me in between the blankets to recover ſome heat, which through the waters and the winds I had loſt.

In this manner did I ly, till it was about ten a clock in the morning, thinking and deviſing with my ſelf, what anſwer *I* ſhould make unto my Maſter; if *I* ſhould deal plainly and truly with him, and acquaint him with the whole paſſages of this buſineſs, it would be a great affront unto me, and that *I* ſhould be plaid upon every moment with whole Vollies of jeſts, and move even the very children in the ſtreet to ſcoff and laugh at me. And to deny it, and entertain his Lordſhip with vain and idle hopes, me thought that likewiſe was not fit-

ting. For *Nicoleta* had already recovered her *Albricias*, and was well rewarded for her good news; and therefore this might seem unto him to be a meet invention to defeat him of his money.

Whil'ſt I was thus muſing with my ſelf, how I might invent ſome means to ſet all right, one of the Servants of the houſe came knocking at my door, and told me, that my Lord would have me come to him.

Well, I got me up, ſhifted my cloths, and put on a freſh ſute, the beſt that I had; and being then as fine and as gallant, as if no ſuch diſaſter had happened unto me, I hyed me up unto my Lord, who expected my comming, and had no ſooner ſeen me, but preſently askt me how the world went, and how chanced it, that I had no ſooner come to give an account of what had paſt betwixt *Fabia* and my ſelf? I told him, That they made me ſtay waiting in the ſtreet until it was midnight, expecting a fair birth of this buſineſs, but it proved in the end that I was diſmiſt with a *Non licet*, telling me, that ſhe could not poſſibly either ſpeak with me or open the door.

I alſo then ſignified unto him, that *I* would go and ly down a while upon my bed, to ſee if I could take ſome reſt, for *I* did not find my ſelf half well. He gave me leave ſo to do. Wherupon *I* went to my chamber, put off my cloths, got me to bed, where I remained till it was almoſt night, hatching a thouſand conceits in my head, waſting my wits, and limbeking my brains, without drawing any juice or ſubſtance thence at all. And becauſe what in regard of my rage and anger, as alſo the ſundry thoughts and imaginations that troubled my mind, *I* was not able to take any reſt on either

ſide,

ſide, but lay tumbling from t'one to t'other; if *I* lay on my back, *I* ſtraight vvay vvaxed vveary; if *I* ſate up in my bed, my Hips vvere too feeble to beare up my body. Whereupon *I* reſolved vvith my ſelf to riſe. And *I* had no ſooner taken my cloathes into my hands, and put my feet out of my bed, but one of the Groomes of the Stable came into my Chamber, and told me, *Sennor Guzman*, There are ſome pretty Wenches beneath at the ſtaires foot vvhich inquire for you, and ſtay vvaiting for your comming in the Portall vvithin the gate. A pockes upon them, quoth *I*; vvhat have *I* to do vvith them? The Devill take them for me. Goe dovvn, and either bid them goe to the Stevvs, or elſe tell them, that *I* am not vvithin. For *I* imagined vvith my ſelf, that all *Rome* by this time had rung of my diſgrace, and that theſe vvere ſome Roguiſh harlotries, that came to laugh and ſcoff at me, and to make themſelves merry vvith my miſ-fortunes. *I* vvas very jealous that they came of purpoſe to play the Wagges vvith me, and therefore vvilled him to diſmiſſe them: and ſo they vvent their vvayes.

The next morning *I* vvas no ſooner up, but *I* received a Letter from my *Nicoleta*, complaining of me, that having come to viſit me the day before, *I* vvould not be ſpoken vvithall, nor give her notice of that vvhich had paſt the other night betvvixt my ſelf and her Miſtris, and vvhat great buſineſſe *I* had, that *I* did not round that ſtreet the next night following, telling me, that ſhe had vvaited there for my comming, till it vvas after midnight.

I vvrote her an anſvver; telling her, that *I* vvould not fail ſometimes that evening to come

and visit her in the back Lane, that was behind the House.

When I was come thither, and she ready to receive me, she began to ask me what was become of me? what great occasions did hinder me that I had not come and seen her the night before? And if not for her, yet for her Mistresses sake, I might have taken that pains. She formed many complaints against me, accusing the inconstancy of men, who made love unto Women, not so much for any good affection that they bore them, as to get the conquest and Mastery of them; and when they had gotten what they desired, and received some Pledge from them, they did quickly slight them, if not wholly forget them.

The Inconstancy of idle young men.

By this, as likewise by that profession which she made of her love to me, I knew her innocency, and *Fabia*'s subtilty, who went about to deceive us both. Thereupon I told her, My *Nicoleta*, thou art quite out of the way, and so mightily deceived, as no one can be more. For I would have thee to know, that thy Mistress hath played the Jack with us both. Then I up and told her all that had befallen me, and how vilely she had used me. She blest her self, crossing and recrossing her self over and over, thinking it to be a thing impossible. As I stood thus talking with her in my best bravery, it happened that one of the Grooms found nuzzling in the Litter which he had made ready for his Horses, a huge big Bore. He being much moved thereat, took up a great Bat in his hand, and belaboured his back and sides; it was a fat Rogue and a great; and like a Bull that is baited, came running forth, as hard as he could drive, he came directly upon me, and took me so on the sudden that I could by

by no means avoid him, and perforce made his way juſt between my legs; ſo that I rode as it were aſtride on Horſe-back, but the clean contrary way, and to keep my ſelf from falling, I took hold of his Tayl with both my hands, uſing that inſtead of a Bridle, I was not able all this while to recover my ſelf, and had my life lain upon it, I knew not for the preſent how to quit my ſelf, handſomely from his Back; and whileſt I was deviſing with my ſelf how I might come fairly off, he ran with me thorow the middle of a durty puddle, that was nothing but mire and filth, ſo that for to ſave my ſelf from falling, and that he might the better bear me thorow the dirt, I was forced to let go his Tayl, and to claſp my arms about the ſides of him, he flinging up his Snout, and huffing and puffing with his noſtrils, he carried me in his hoggiſh kind of Gallap, ſome three or four ſtreets from off that place, grumbling and grunting as he went along, and with his whining and crying, calling the people together to ſee what he ailed; whileſt I perceiving the ſhame and danger I was like to run, fell off from his back of mine own accord, not regarding when or where I ſhould light.

Well, I got me up as well as I could on my legs, but all bemired, and bewrayed with durt, being hooted at by the people, and affronted by all the women and children in *Rome*, my face being all beſmeared with durt, and my cloaths from top to bottom, all playdered over with mire, that I ſeemed to be thrown out of the belly of ſome Whale. The people from out their Doors and Windows ſhouted out ſo loud, and the boys did ſo flock about me, that as one that was out of his Wits, and deprived of Judgement, I ſought where I might

best hide my self. At last I spyed out a house hard by, where I thought I should find some good entertainment. I entered thereinto, and made fast the door, and so barricadoed my self up close against all that company, that were desirous to see me. But it did not fall out so well with me as I could have wished.

The Master of the house was not willing that I should stay there, but reviling me with odious tearms, sought to drive me out with evil language, thinking every hour a year, till he had thrust me out of Doors. For he was jealous of me, and began to suspect, that this was but some trick or stratagem of mine own plotting, having taken hold on that occasion to get into his house, and to bring my purpose more easily to pass. Nor was this my honest Gentleman much out of the way; for the Gentlewoman his Wife were the Breeches, she was Master of the House, a Friend to her own will and pleasure: So that it was no wonder that her Husband would see Visions, and dream of strange apparitions. He no sooner saw me within his doors, but he called all his people about him, and leaving me all alone in the outward porch to the great gate, would not suffer his Servants to do me such kindness as to afford me a bucket of water to wash my self withal.

The Street was full of men and boyes, which did persecute me with shril shouts and loud cryes, calling in a sharp and high Key, Thrust him out! Thrust him out! Why do ye let this foul beast abide with you? Put out this same pickled Pig amongst us. Some honest folk amongst them did pitty me. These sought to defend me from their fury, labouring to pacifie that rude rabble.

I was nothing all over but a meer lump of durt, having like your *Negro's*, no more white about me to be ſeen, ſave only my eys and teeth. It being now late, and all the people gone, I ſneaked out in lamentable pickle, throwing my Cloak over my face without being known by any but in regard of that ſtore of durt, and that evil ſavor which I bare about me in my cloathes, which way ſ ever I went they mocked me, but others would excuſe me and ſay, Let the poor fellow alone, it is but a little ſlipperineſs of the Guts, a looſeneſs of the Hilts, a little laxative oyl that is come from him, which upon occaſion may be every mans caſe as well as his; ſome ſtopping their noſes as they went along by me would cry out *Fob*; and there was not any that paſt by me, but had a fling at me: And ſome would not ſtick to ask me, Tell me (friend) how ſell you a pound of this Wax? And others, What is the price of your Honey-combs? And a third, Sure this muſt needs be ſome Perfumer or other, ſince he ſmells ſo ſweet. I anſwered them all with ſilence, by which means I paſt the better along by them.

That which did moſt trouble me, was to ſee the Dogs in every ſtreet come barking after me, who the faſter I went, did ſo much the more fiercely ſet upon me, and eſpecially your Mongrel Curs, which followed me cloſe at the heels, and would now and then give me a nip at the Calves of my legs.

At laſt I was come to my old home, being unſeen and unheard of any, had got me up to my lodging. I put my hand in my Pocket, to take out the Key, but could not find it. Then did I feel for it in the other Pocket, but could not meet with it. I cut two or three capers in the air, hoping to hear it gingle but all was one; then did I fall a ſearching of my

Breeches, to see if happily it had got in betwixt the linings of my Hose; but the Devil a key was there. As I stood making funeral lamentations over my misfortunes, perplexed, and as yet not resolved what I were best to do, *I* got me to one of my companions, knockt at his Door, which he presently opened unto me; where *I* did remain while the lock was ripped off from mine. *I* durst not sit down upon a Trunk that was there in the room, for fear of leaving therein the print of this my errour. This unhappy accident could not be kept so secret, but that it must needs be known; for *I* had scarce shifted my cloths, and washed my self clean, but that my Master knew *I* was all bedurted. The Servants had told him in what case *I* was, but none of them could tell him the cause of it. He demanded first of one, and then of another, how this came about, but none could inform him farther than what they had seen.

He presently sent for me, and when we two were all alone, then did he begin to ask me how *I* came by my fall, and where? *I* told him that *I* stood at a Neighbours door, that was right over against *Fabia*'s house, watching very diligently, if *I* could have the opportunity to speak with her; and whilst *I* was carefully attending this business, her Maid *Nicoleta* came forth, making signs unto me, that *I* should quickly come away. And being overjoyed with this unexpected good fortune, *I* would needs cross the Lane, where the way was worst and foulest (because *I* would not lose time in going about by that which was the cleaner) fetching a nimble leap thinking to pitch sure with my foot upon a Stone, that was not so firmly laid as it should have been, it tottered aside, and so my foot slipt,

and

and ſo I fell into the durt, where *I* was moſt pittifully bemired. Whereupon *Nicholeta*, the people that paſſed by beginning to flock about me, withdrew her ſelf, and went in. So that *I* was inforced to come home, without effecting that *I* went for; which did much more grieve me than my fall. He then ſaid unto me, *I* ſuffer more in this than thy ſelf. The harm is more mine than thine.

This buſineſs (*Guzmanillo*) goes not luckily along with thee. *It* was a work of darkneſs, thou wentſt about it late in the evening, in an unfortunate hour, this diſgrace could not have befaln thee in any mans ſervice, but mine, nor have lighted ſo unluckily upon any but my ſelf, ſuch is my misfortune.

Whereunto *I* replyed, *I* would not that your Lordſhip ſhould make this ill conſtruction to your ſelf, nor would *I* have you to reckon this in the number; but *I* am rather perſwaded, that it would have been worſe with us, if this misfortune had not befaln me. And *I* am the bolder to tell you ſo, for that her Husband was at that time at home in the houſe, and therefore it makes me to ſuſpect that there was ſome trap laid for me & that *I* was called in to ſome ill end; and ſay, that the Servants of the houſe ſhould either have ſpyed me, or overheard me talking with their Miſtreſs, what doth your Excellency think, would then have become of me? Aſſure your ſelf, they would have cudgell'd me ſoundly, and have uſed me ſo hardly that *I* ſhould not have ſcaped their fingers, till they had broken all my bones, and ſent me home without a Noſe. For my ſo often rounding of that houſe, hath cauſed ſome notice to be taken thereof; and albeit that ſome do think that *I* onely do it for *Nicoleta's* ſake,

ſake, yet many, that do not know the good Love that is between us, are apt to conceive the worſt. And I have of late obſerved, that the good old man *Don Beltran*, hath looked a skew upon me, as if he were not well pleaſed with me. He was wont heretofore to ſpeak kindly unto me, asking my opinion concerning the Ladies and Gentlewoman of this Court, but now he p ſſes along by me, not ſo much as once offering to ſpeak to me: and if I put off my Hat and ſalute him, he looks another way, as if he did not ſee me, and goes along by me like a Log, without any life or motion towards me at all.

My Maſter all this while attentive unto me, and ever and anon knitting his Brow, and caſting up his eyes, whereby I knew, that I had ſtung him, and made him to ſit muſing, as one that had been amazed upon the Report of ſome ſtrange and ſudden accident; I ſaw all his Cards, and knew what game he had in his hand, and how he would play it, and found by him, that he was afraid both of his reputation and his perſon, and it would be little for his Honour, if any diſgrace ſhould befall him in that houſe, in regard it was one of the greateſt and the nobleſt allyed in all that City. I taking hold of this occaſion, came in a little cloſer unto him, helping to turn the Key about, when I ſaw which way it was winding. I ſpake thus unto him, There is no great heed to be given to that which hath ſucceeded in this buſineſs, Your Excellency may do well to diſſemble this buſineſs, and to ſeem to take no notice of what hath paſt, nor to care a pin for it, For mine own part, I ſhall ever truly ſerve you to the death, fall back, fall edge, hap what will hap, all is one to me. Yet withall it is likely

to

to prove and endleſs piece of work and an immortal kind of buſineſs. Beſides, I may not well ſet my foot any more in thoſe parts, by reaſon that my haunting of that place is now generally noted, and ſome ſtick not to talk too liberally of it.

There are not wanting in *Rome* as good and better ware than ſhe, which may be had with leſs danger, at an eaſie rate, and give your Lordſhip more content and leſs trouble. If one wont another will.

You do not well underſtand me, ſaid my Maſter. For there is nothing now at this preſent more prejudiciall, nor more noted and obſerved, than any the leaſt ſpot or weakeneſſe in a publick perſon. For men of my quallity are bound to wear ſuch cloathes as befit ſuch Miniſters, and not as *ſhall* fit beſt with our own fancie. Otherwiſe, we ſhall be taxed by thoſe that caſt an eye upon them. And every little indecencie in them, turns to a ſtain at leaſt, if not a foul blot. A litle breath (you know) will make the biggeſt Organs go. And your greateſt men ſound lowdeſt in the eares of the world, when the noyſe of their actions are blown abroad by the bellowes of the peoples breath. I ſwear unto thee, that if I had not ingaged my ſelf by my word, and more particularly impawned my credit to *Nicoleta*, by giving my faithfull promiſe, that I would come and viſit *Fabia* in perſon, beſides it would grieve me, to be accounted inconſtant, or cowardly, blaming me of lightneſſe, that my love ſhould be like that of children, or that I went about but to try of what metall ſhe was made, and then to laugh and ſcoff at her, and that it ſhould be ſaid of me, that I did then turn tail, when I might have ſeized on my game,

and

and had the Patridge in foot, which I might have truſſed, if *I* would my ſelf, *I* would not have car'd a button. But ſince that on our part, we have uſed all poſſible diligences, and that they prevail ſo little, and coſt us ſo much, *I* will go no more following of that, which flyeth from me; But deal with her, as doth the generous Hawk, by letting his Bird go, by which nobleneſſe of mine, that ill name ſhall be quite buried under ground which for my ſake hath been raiſed of her.

This his reſolution was my ſalvation, and praying this his good purpoſe, the iſſue was the eaſier, not ſo much for his intention, as for my reputation. And therefore *I* ſaid unto him, your excellencie ſhall herein do like your ſelf.

This is a Chriſtian conſideration, a Daughter worthy the birth of your Lordſhips brain, and therefore fit that you ſhould father it, and not caſt it off. And for the manner how you ſhall come off from this buſineſſe, leave that to me. This being ſaid, he licenſed me from him, ſaying Farewell *Guzman*, and think upon this buſineſſe, which *I* put into thy hands, as *I* have already done mine honour. And ſo we parted.

Chap.

Chap. IV.

Guzman departs from Rome *and goes for* Florence; *a Thief enters into Friendſhip with him, that under that colour, he might rob him.*

I was now become the common Table-talk of all the Town, my Lord, his Pages, and other his ordinary ſervants, took liberty and licence of language. For what between jeſt and earneſt, they did ſo nip me with their witty jeſts, and pay me home with their Satyricall laſhes, that your Mariners do not more ſtrain their tacklings in a tempeſt, than they did wreſt and wring the very bowells within me.

One day as *I* paſſt along the ſtreet, many little children, as well as the greater lubbers, did perſecute me, laughing and ſcoffing at me, with ſtrange out-cryes, and loud ſhoutings, making a moſt hideous noyſe. *I* took up ſtones, and would have thrown at them; but a young man of mine own ſtature, quality and years, well behaved, but ſomewhat hot and choleſick, came running in upon me, and held my arm ſo faſt, that *I* was not able to move a finger to do them any hurt; yet did he deal ſo honeſtly with me, as to take part with me againſt them all, and to defend me againſt this their rage and fury, drawing in two or three other of his friends, that came along in his company, making reſiſtance both in deed, and in words, againſt thoſe Hobbet-dehoyes, which like

Guzman *perſecuted by boyes and children.*

like so many Hob-goblings, or little Devills, did haunt me up and down from street to street, and from house to house. And having now quieted and layd these unruly spirits, he took me by the hand, bringing me himself alone home to my lodging, leaving his Companions behind to keep back the boyes.

When he had brought me thus home, *I* would fain have had him to stay with me, that *I* might have fastened some Kindnesse upon him, and have done him all the curtesie and honour the house could afford: But could by no means get him to accept thereof.

Then did *I* intreat him, that he would tell me his name, as also where was his lodging, that *I* might come to kisse his hands, and give him thanks for the un-deserved kindnesse *I* had received from him; but we would neither acquaint me with the one, or the other; promising to return some other time to visit me. Only he told me, that he did bear particular affection, as well to my person, as my Countrey; for that *I* was a *Spaniard*, and that he was as sensible of this disgrace of mine, as if it were his own. And with this we took leave each of other. *I* came home with my colour so changed, my eyes so inflamed, and my understanding so confounded, that (not considering well what *I* did) comming just in the nick, when dinner was a serving up, *I* would needs go up with the rest of the Pages to wait at his Lordships table. My Master perceived *I* was inwardly much troubled; Whereupon he demanded of me, what was the cause of this my perturbation? *I*, being taken thus on a sudden, having no leisure to fall then a coining, and having never a new lye in store, told him all the whole truth

of

of the buſineſſe, and every particular paſſage there-of: thoſe that waited at the board, not being able to forbear laughing, one claps me the cover of the Cup that he held in his hand before his face, another the Plate that he held between his Thumbs, a third the Napkin wherewith he ſerved as Sewer, and thoſe that were empty handed, laying one hand on their face, and with the other ſtopping their mouth, their hearts being ready to burſt in their bellies, hi'de them (for fear of blurting in my Lords face) as faſt out of the room, as their leggs would carry them. And they paſt ſo farre therein beyond the bounds of modeſtie, that his excellencie was ſomewhat moved thereat, and call'd out aloud unto them to be quiet. *I* was ſo aſhamed and ſo confounded in my ſelf, that for all the *Maſters*, and women that were in the world, *I* would never more take upon me to treat of their love matters, nor be a Broker in that Kind for the greateſt Prince in Chriſtendom.

The ſtorm being now layd, my Maſter willed me to get me down to dinner.

Now *I* durſt not go (as before) out of doores but by night. So that all day long *I* kept my ſelf cloſe in my Chamber, ſpending my time, either in reading good bookes, or playing upon ſome inſtrument, or talking with my friends. *I*nſomuch, that this retiring of my ſelf, wrought in thoſe of the houſe a new reſpect; and in thoſe abroad, ſilence.

Now every mans tongue was ſtill, and now by abſenting my ſelf from their ſight, all theſe my buſineſſes were forgotten. The young man came often to viſit me, that had taken my part, when *I* was ſo vilely mockt and abuſed by the Boyes.

He made me many offers of his purſe and his perſon; he acquainted me with his Countrey, his Name: and the cauſe of his comming to *Rome*. *I* held my ſelf bound to do him all good offices, giving credit to all that he told me; at laſt he askt me, whether *I* would take the paines to walk along with him to the palace? *I* excuſed my ſelf unto him, and told him the cauſe why *I* had retyred my ſelf, and how well it ſped with me.

This young fellow was as very a Wagg as my ſelf, much of my age, and his Beard (like mine) newly budding forth; he preſently caught hold of theſe words, and ſaid thus unto me.

Travel yieldeth much delight.

Sennor Guzman, you have carryed your ſelf with that diſcretion as is proper unto you, and may truly be termed your own. *If I*, Sir, were in your caſe, rather than *I* would be thus mewed up, and for ſo long a time, *I* would wear out this diſgrace by travelling abroad, rounding all *Italy* before *I* would return. *In* which travell, you ſhall not onely take ſingular content; but you ſhall likewiſe obtain your intended end, and with more advantage than you can poſſibly pretend, by this your private ſhutting up of your ſelf in your Lords houſe.

He repreſented unto me the great excellencies of *Florence*, the great beauty of *Genoa*, and the incomparable government of *Venice*. Whereupon *I* got me up as ſoon as it was day, and brought my Lord his cloathes; to whom, while he was making him ready, *I* gave an account of this my reſolution. He liked very well of it, holding it a commendable, and an honeſt courſe, that it would make much for my good, and ſtop all thoſe mouths, that were now ſo clamorous againſt me; he told me,

me, that if *I* had a minde to go into *France I* ſhould have Letters of recommendations to his friends there in my favour.

I kiſt his hands, and thank't his Excellencie for theſe his favours towards me; and told him, that (if it might ſtand with his good leave and liking) *I* was very deſirous to travell thorow all *Italy*, and eſpecially ſee *Florence*, whereof *I* had heard ſuch large commendations; and from thence go to *Siena*, where *Pompeyo* did then reſide; one that was my eſpecial good friend, and well known to his Lordſhip, for we did ordinarily converſe together by our Letters, though we and never ſeen one another.

From that day forward, *I* began to ſet things in order for my journey; my new aequaintance came often to viſit me.

I ſuſpected no trecherie, *I* received good deeds, *I* heard good words, *I* ſaw a man in an honeſt and faſhionable habit, who ſought to give me good counſell, and ſeemed to favour me, who had put his life in danger, to ſave mine, who viſited me (as I thought) without any hope of intereſt, or particular profit to himſelf. He told me, that he was my Countrey-man, an *Andeluzian*, born in the Citie of *Sevill*, a Principall Gentleman of the houſe of the *Sayavedras*? But all were lyes; for he was of *Valencia*; yet he ſpake the language of *Caſtile* excellent well. He was a handſome well-favoured young man, well ſpoken, of a fair behaviour, and a fine Companion in his converſation; But all this cunning carriage was, that thereby he might have the freer acceſſe into my Lords houſe, and into my Chamber, to filch

The qualitj of a cunning Thief.

from thence whatſoever he could handſomely finger.

He came the other day to viſit me, and finding that I had altered my habit, and put my ſelf into another kind of faſhion of cloathes, differing from my wonted wear, he ſtartled, and ſtood afterwards as one amazed. At laſt he askt me the reaſon of this ſudden alteration. I told him, that I had taken his counſell, and that I was reſolved to go to *Siena*, where I ſhould meet with *Pompeyo*, a great and intire friend of mine, and from thence to paſſe for *Florence*, and ſo afterwards to viſit all *Italy*.

When he heard me ſay ſo, he ſeemed to be very glad thereof, much commending this my reſolution. He was very diligent in obſerving how I did make up my Trunks, putting his helping hand thereunto. He marked where *I* had layd a Sett of Gold Buttons, a chain, and other Iewells that I had, and above three hundred Spaniſh Piſtolets that I carried along with me.

When I had lockt, and nailed up my Truncks, I layd up the keyes upon my Beds head, which he obſerved, and as he and I was talking of my journey and telling him that I purpoſed to ſend away my Truncks before, and that I would ſtay ſome ſix or ſeven dayes in *Rome*, to take leave of my friends, by which time they would be at *Siena* where I ſhould find them ready for me, when I came thither; in that very inſtant there came one of my Lords ſervants unto me, and told me, that there were ſome beneath did inquire for me, and did much deſire to ſpeak with me. And becauſe my Chamber was out of order, unſwept, and not fit, by reaſon it was ſo foul, to receive any viſit, I went

went down to see who they were.

In the *interim*, *Sayavedra* had opportunity to take the print of all my keys, in certain pieces of soft Wax Candels ends that lay about the Chamber. Those that sought for me, were certain Muleters, or Carriers, which came for my luggage; they came up, I delivered it unto them, and they carried it away. Sayavedra *craftily cozens* Guzman.

This business dispatched, my friend and I continued talking together: and because he did not offer to go away, I thought he did it out of courtesie, and the friendship that was between us, and that it was out of his love to keep me company for that little while I was to stay. Whereas indeed he onely stayed in Town, till counterfeited keys were fashioned by the Smiths hand.

He continued his Visits with me for three or four dayes together: and when he thought he had made all cock-sure; he came one Evening to my Chamber, feigned himself very sick, and seemed to be as it were in a Lethargie, or the like drowzie disease; complaining, that he was scarce able to stand upon his leggs, desiring me that I would give him leave to go home to his lodging (when I saw he would needs be gone) I desired that he would acquaint me with his lodging, that I might come and visit him, and send him some physicall curiosities, fit for sick folks, to rellish his tast, and comfort his stomack, or that I might serve him in any thing else, wherein I might be usefull unto him, He told me that he lodged in the house of a certain Gentlewoman, that lived very secret and private; but in case this his sickness should not suddenly leave him, or that he should chance to grow worse & worse, that then he would advise me therof

that I might come and visit him. And so taking his leave of me, that very day he took post, and rode towards *Siena*, where he found his Companions, that went along with the Muleters, that they might see where, and to whom these Truncks were consigned.

Sayavedra rides Post to Siena, and finely robs Guzman of his Trunks.

When he was come to *Siena*, the people seing a Gentleman come in that good equipage by post, took him to be some principall *Spaniard*; He alighted at the chiefest Inne that was in all the City, where presently his Companions came about him, who had there attended his comming, and giving it out that they were his servants, they waited diligently upon him.

As soon as he was arrived, he sent one of them to *Pompeyo*, to give him to understand, that he was newly come to Town. When my friend had received this message, and knew that I was in the Town, he was so over-joyed, that going to put on his cloak, it was a good while ere he could find the way to unfold it, and to set it right upon his shoulders, through his too much hast, and longing desire that he had to see me. Being come to the Inne, where *Sayavedra* had put on my person, he took it very unkindly, complaning much, that I should make him such a stranger, and deal so unfriendly with him, as not to alight at his house, which I might command as freely as mine own. Which *Sayavedra* having excused as well as he could; they afterwards fell into discourse, talking of his journey, and some other things of *Rome*, untill it was night.

At which time *Pompeyo*, for the present, taking his leave of him, that he might leave him to his rest: *Sayavedra* gave (in his presence) the key of

of one of his Truncks, to one of his ſervants, ſaying unto him withall; Do you hear, Sirrah? Go you along with *Sennor Pompeyo*, and take me out ſuch a ſuit which you ſhall find in ſuch apart, for I will put on that to morrow.

They went away together, and his ſervant punctually performed that which his Maſter had commanded him; uncording, in the preſence of *Pompeyo*, the very ſelf ſame Trunck, whereunto he was directed, and taking forth the foreſaid ſuit of clothes, he locks me the Trunck, and putting up the key in his pocket, he comes his way. That night *Pompeyo* ſent him a very good ſupper, a neat collation of Comfits, and ſweet meats, and admirable rich Wines, wherewith when *Sayavedra* and his fellows had ſupt, and had eat and drunk their fill, they got them to bed, where they ſo ſoundly ſlept, that they did not wake till the next day.

That morning *Pompeyo* came ſomewhat early to viſit him, but his ſervants intreated him to hold his Maſter excuſed; for he had not taken any reſt all that night, and was now newly faln aſleep. He told them, he was very ſorry that he had ſo ill a night of it; he would not therefore now trouble him, but would go his way and come anon. But they would by no means give way to that, telling him, that their Maſter would be very angry with them, when he ſhould know that he had been there, and that none of them had either ſo much wit, or manners to tell him of it. Whereupon, they went preſently up into his Chamber, and ſignified unto him, that *Sennor Pompeyo* was come to ſee him. He was very glad of it, and commanding one of them to ſet ready a Chair for him, ſent

down another to intreat him to come up.

Pompeyo, as ſoon as he came in, asked him how he did, and what was the cauſe of his laſt nights indiſpoſition? He told him, that for want of uſe, he was ſo weary with riding poſt, that he found himſelf ſomewhat diſtempered, his body being overheated, and that he had a purpoſe to be let bloud.

Pompeyo was very earneſt with him, that he would change his lodging, and take his houſe for his Inne. *Sayavedra* excuſed himſelf, telling him, that his ſervants were unruly and given to diſorder, and that he was reſolved to put them away, and to take new within theſe eight or nine dayes, and that then he would promiſe him to receive this courteſie at his hands, which he had ſo kindly offered unto him: Intreating him in the mean while, that he would do him the kindneſſe, as to ſend his truncks by one of his own ſervants, becauſe he had no great truſt in any of his own, and fearing, that giving them the keys to fetch ſuch things as he needed, they might put ſome tricks upon him.

Pompeyo liked well of it, and thought that he did therein very wiſely and diſcretely, onely he ſeemed not to be ſo well pleaſed, that he ſhould treat of taking phyſick in an Inne. But reſting contented with the promiſe that he had made him, he performed what he deſired, and was no ſooner come to his lodging but he laded certain Porters with his Truncks, and ſending one of his ſervants along with them, he ſaw them ſafely delivered, to *Sayavedra*. He ſent him that day a very dainty dinner; and theſe two friends having taken leave of each other for that night, that they might go to bed in a good hour, *Sayavedra* and his Companions

ons conveyed ſecretly into another houſe that which they had brought thither, and taking poſt, departed for *Florence*; whither when they were come, they divided the ſpoyl amongſt them.

Sayavedra *and his Companions poſt away to* Florence, *where they divide the ſpoyls.*

Theſe copartners, where their crafts-Maſters, ſubtill fellowes, and ſtout Rogues; the principall plotter and contriver of all theſe piſtring projects, was a *Bolonian* born, he was a great Scholar, and a very learned Doctor in this kind of Art; his name was *Alexandro Bentivoglio*

This *Alexander* was a notable thief, nimble finger'd, and of a ſtrong and able body, and a notorious Rogue

Now becauſe he was the Ring-leader, and the onely principall man amongſt them, and that did all in all, he made *Sayavedra* content himſelf with a little, giving him ſome, but the worſer ſort of of my cloathes. And thinking that he could not remain there in ſafety, he got him into the *Popes* territories, where his father was *Alcalde*. So that he poſted to *Bologna*, carrying away with him the Buttons, the Jewels, and the Piſtolets, retiring himſelf home to his fathers houſe, and the reſt of his fellowes, that ſhared with him, fled to *Trent*, as they afterward told me in *Bologna*, and there they diſpearſed themſelves.

When *Pompeyo* returned to viſit me, not finding my *Statua* there, nor any of his fellowes, he askt my Hoſt of the houſe what was become of them? He told him, that the night before they went away from thence with their Truncks, but whither they knew not. He took this for an ill ſigne; and ſuſpecting what this might chance to prove in the end, uſed great and extraordinary diligence in the ſearch of them; and having notice that they rode poſt by the

the way of *Florence*, he ſent Hue and cry after them, with a warrant to apprehend them.

Thoſe few dayes that I afterwards ſtayed in *Rome*, I was jocund and merry, and did not ſo much as once dream of any ſuch roguerie intended againſt me. And out of a great deſire that I had to know how my ſick friend did, whether he had recovered his health, or were in worſe caſe than when he left me, I ſtayd four dayes waiting for him, but ſeeing he came not at me, nor ſent unto me, I continued four days longer in Town, making inquirie after him amongſt ſome of his Countrey men, giving them all the marks and ſignes, whereby they might know, or at leaſt gheſſe at the man; but this was to look to hear a *Magnificat* at Matens, or to ſeek after the man in the Moon, for there was no ſuch kind of thing to be heard of. I did verily believe then that he was very ſick, if not dead, and ſo taking leave of my Lord Embaſſadour, I reſolved the next day following to begin my journey.

My Lord grieved for my departure, clapt both his hands upon my ſhoulders, and taking a chain of Gold from off his neck, which he did uſually wear, and putting it on mine, he told me, while he was doing me this honour, *Guzman*, I beſtow this upon thee, that thou mayſt, as oft as thou look'ſt upon it, have me in remembrance, as one that wiſhes thee all good. He gave me good ſtore of Crovvns, and laid his Command upon me, that whereſoever I ſhould hap to be, I ſhould from time to time give him account of my health, and how things did ſucceed with me, aſſuring me, that none ſhould rejoice more in my well-doing, than himſelf; hopin, when I had made and end of my travel, to ſee

me

me again in his Houſe, whither I ſhould alwaies be moſt welcome.

I kiſſed his hand, he beſtowed his bleſſing upon me, and with it a good high-way Nag. This done, I bid my fellowes farewel. and rode my way, making uſe of this Nag in all my Travel.

My Lord and his Servants were ready to melt for the ſorrow they had conceived of my Departure; He, becauſe he loved me, and ſaw he muſt now loſe me, and would doubtleſs find a want of me, for ſuch Services as I could beſt do him, and himſelf took moſt content in; And they, becauſe I was alwaies their good friend, never did them ill Offices, told no tales of them, but did further them all that I could, ſo that *I* was generally well-beloved of them all, for by doing them real courteſies, and in that free and friendly faſhion, I could not but gain the greater love.

And if that which ſo unfortunately befel me in *Fabias* houſe, had not been divulged abroad by that Aſpin-leved tongue of *Nicoleta*, who babbled forth the jeſt which was put upon me by her Miſtreſs in the back Court of her houſe, I had never forſaken that Commodity which I found in my Lords Houſe, nor his Lordſhip have loſt ſo good a Servant.

I went out of *Rome* like a Prince, well entreated, and better provided, having ſtore of Crowns to ſpend abroad, till the durt I had taken ſhould become dry and be rubb'd out. There is no ſuch remedy as time and Travel to wear out unlucky chances.

I was now on my way towards my friend *Pompeyo*, who looked for me every hour, having provided for me a neat lodging, with a handſome bed,

and

and Table, and all other furniture fitting thereunto. *I* came at laſt to *Siena*, and inquiring after him, they directed me to his houſe; thither *I* came: *I* found him within, he received me, *I* cannot ſay whether more cheerfully or more heavily, ſomtimes ſhewing a joyful, ſometimes a troubled countenance. *I* requeſted him to help me to my Trunks, that I might change my clothes.

Hereupon he was inforced to open all the whole buſineſs unto me, putting me in good hope, that there were ſuch diligences uſed, and that good courſe already taken, that he did not doubt but that *I* ſhould have all again, and loſe nothing of that which they had thus cunningly ſtoln from me. *I* was ſtrook with this blow to the very heart; and was thereupon ſo ſad, being thus ſtripped of all in a ſtrange Country, far from my Friends, and forced to ſeek new, having but little ſtore of money in my Purſe, and no more but one ſuit of cloaths only my back, and two Shirts in my *Port-manteau*.

Well, when *I* ſaw how the world went, and that there was no help for it; *I* pluckt up my Spirits, ſet a good face on the matter.

While my Friend and *I* were ſitting at Table, anon after we had dined, as we were talking of this misfortune of mine, and the cunning cartiage of theſe theeves that had thus robbed me, I might hear a great trampling of the Servants of the houſe, and ſome others, who making haſt up the ſtairs, came in and told us; We have him, we have him, the principal thief is taken, and the theft confeſt.

This put new courage into me, we roſe up from the Table, to meet and ſalute this Officer. I asked him how the World went? He told me it was like

to

to go well. Then I farther demanded of him, in what manner? he replyed, that one of the theeves was taken, and that he would diſcover all. All my joy was quite quenced with the water of this bad news.

Pompeyo called for his Cloak, and went preſently to the judge of the Court; but all this did me no good. For he neither denied the Theft, nor confeſſed that he was in the faulr. He ſaid that the others had comitted it, and that he was but their Servant, and that they had only beſtowed upon him one poor ſuit of clothes, which he ſold and ſpent, partly in *Florence*, and upon the way in his return to *Siena*.

Upon this confeſſion (and other conſiderations which offered themſelves unto the Judge) he was ſentenced to publique ſhame, and to remain a baniſhed Man from that City for a certain time.

While this buſineſs was a handling, one of *Pompeyos* ſervants ſtood diligently waitingthere, expecting the iſſue. And vvhenhe had his ſentence given him, as if he had brought my Truneks along with him, he came running up in all haſt to my Chamber laughing all the way as he came, & as jocund as apy crying out aloud, O *Sennor Guzman*, laugh and be merry, the Thief that helped to Rob you is condemned to open ſhame, if you vvill ſee him, hy you to the vvindovv, and look out quickly, for it cannot be long ere he come. O that this Fool, this Block-head, this Coxcome had been mine ovvn ſervant, or in ſome place, vvhere I might have had my vvill of him, that I might have pumeld him about the pate, bob'd him about the noſe, ſtrook out the teeth of him, and beaten the javv bones of this Aſſe ſo ſore, that he ſhould not have been able for a moneth after to fall to his feeding. I vvas mightily

Guzman relleth a tale of a ſtout Judge as a fooliſh Atturney.

mightily out of patience at theſe his fooliſh vvords. O thou Traytor, (ſaid I to my ſelf) ſeeſt thou in vvhat poor caſe I am, and in a manner quite undon, and doeſt thou go about to comfort me vvith ſuch a poor ſatiſfaction as this? I vvas ready almoſt to burſt vvith choler; but even then, there did offer it ſelf unto myremembrance juſt ſuch another comfort as this; vvhich vvas told me for a truth had paſſed in *Sevill*; vvhich made my ſides to tickle again vvith laughing, the very thought vvhereof had made me quite forget my former anger. And this it vvas.

A Judg of that City, by eſpecial Order from the ſupreme Councell, took a delinquent, that had been a famous falſifier of Deeds, had often counterfeited his Majeſties hand, and feigned many falſe Patents, by means whereof he got a great deal of money in divers parts, and at divers times; for the which he was by the ſayd Judg, condemned to be hanged; notwithſtanding this offender was a Church-man, and therefore did appeal from his Sentence, challenging his privilege of being tryed by the Eccleſiaſticall power, as by his competent Judg. But the Judg being reſolved, commanded to hang him out of hand.

The Ordinary, threatning the Judg with *Excommunications*, and that in the Churches there ſhould be *Ceſſatio a Divinis*. But the Delinquent was brought to the Gallows, and when he was upon the Ladder, and had the Rope about his neck, there came a certain Notary to the foot of the Ladder who had ſollicited this buſineſſe, and laying his hand upon his breſt, ſaid unto him,

Sir, you ſee, all poſſible diligence hath been uſed, and not any one eſſentiall thing left out, that might

make

make for you; but this (you ſee) will not hould water, nor do us that good we thought it would have done; For, as you may perceive, the Judg (out of a wilfull humour) hath proceeded *de facto* with you. But I vow and ſwear unto you (by that my Place and Credit which I hold in the world) that he hath done you therein a moſt notorious wrong, and contrary to all Law and Juſtice; but ſeeing it cannot now be otherwiſe, and that for the preſent there is no help for it, I ſhall wiſh you, Sir, to arm your ſelf with patience, and to take your hanging quietly, and put your truſt in me: for I will ſtay with you at the laſt, I will not leave you till *I* ſee you hanged. And leave it to me, to right the wrong he hath done you.

Mee thinks, this poor Clyent that ſuffered, might very well have ſaid to his Attourney, *I* ſhould like it much better (Sir) that you would come up here and take my place, and give me leave to go and follow mine own buſineſſe.

My thief was freed, he had confeſt who were the principal Offenders, and which way they went; for which cauſe, as alſo that he had rounded the Citie on an Aſſe, and had been put to open ſhame, he was ſet at liberty; leaving me (poor man) in the wretched priſon of poverty: Where *I* muſt now take my leave of you, and bid you all Good night.

FINIS.

THE ROGUE, OR THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN de ALFARACHE.

The second Book.

LONDON,
Printed by *Henry Hills*, in the year MDCLV.

THE ROGUE,

OR,

The ſecond part of the Life of GUZMAN de *Alfarache.*

The ſecond Book.

That which befel Guzman *in* Italy.

WHen I was in my Proſperity I had many Friends, all men did deſire my Love, made much of me, feaſted me, and did offer their ſervice unto me, but my moneys failing, they alſo failed; ſo that their Friendſhip, and my money, had an end at once.

That little wealth that I had was ſtoln from me, which was my undoing. I ſtaid ſome daies, (though but a few) in my friends houſe, in which ſhort time, he fell off from me by degrees, finding at laſt, that I had but a ſlippery Eel in my hand, and that little courteſie which he had ſhewed me, was not ſo much out of any hearty good will, as for fear, leſt I ſhould ſeek to recover my loſt goods of him, by courſe of Law.

I read his thoughts in his looks, and did ſeriously reſent his doble dealing & theſe fair but falſe ſhews of Love; wherfore perceiving how much perplexed he was, and how willing to be rid of me, I reſolved with my ſelf to go for *Florence*, I imparted this my purpoſe unto him, telling him, that I much deſired to ſee that City, for the great commendation that I had heard of it, and thoſe famous ſights that were there to be ſeen. He demanded of me, when I was minded to begin my journey, but never asked what I wanted.

I made all the haſt I could to get me gone from *Siena*, that I might leave *Pompeyo* well-pleaſed therewith; who I knew, would never think himſelf well at eaſe, till he were well eaſed of me: well, I took my leave of him; and ſo all alone ſet forward on my journey, accompanied with a world of melancholy thoughts, attended by a multitude of cares, and therefore I rode plotting and deviſing with my ſelf, how I might make them lighter.

I had not gone thus muſing many miles, but it was my hap to light on *Sayavedra*, who had left *Siena* to comply with his baniſhment. Whom I no ſooner ſaw, but my kind heart began to melt, and I could not chuſe but take compaſſion of him,

and

and must needs salute him; I could not for my life refrain from speaking lovingly unto him, nor he abstain from receiving me with tears, he bowed himself to kiss my skirtop, earnestly beseeching me, that I would be pleased to forgive him, rendring me likewise thanks, that during the time of his Imprisonment, I never offered to accuse him; excusing himself also, that he had not, as soon as he was set at Liberty, come to visit me, laying the fault thereof in his lack of boldness, and the largeness of his offence. Yet, for to make satisfaction and payment of this his debt, he would become my slave, and do me faithful service all the dayes of his life; I, who ever knew him to be a man, that had both a strong brain, and a nimble wit, which did make him fit for any imployment, I was the more willing to accept of his Offer; and so taking him into my service, we jogg'd on along by little and little like a couple of good Fellows, talking of divers things on the way.

And albeit I was not ignorant, that he was a notorious thief, and a notable cunning Rogue, yet I held it the less inconveniency of the two, to have a Knave, than a Fool, to my man. And therefore knowing him so well as I did, I thought it as good, if not better to entertain a Knave that I knew, as a knave, that I knew not; also for that I had not much now to lose, I admitted him into my Service. He askt me (as soon as I had entertained him) which way I meant to take? I told him, I was for *Florence*, led thither out of a desire that I had to satisfy my longing, by seeing that City, whereof I had heard so much. Whereunto my Servant replyed, and said; Sir, whatsoever you have heard therof, I make no question, when you come

there, but your self will confess, report hath been too short with you; he made me a large relation of the foundation, Government, and Civil Wars, and beauty of *Florence*, until we were come as neer night, as we were to our In, whereunto we went to lodge. And having there well rested and refreshed our selves, we got up betimes in the morning, and when we came within sight of *Florence*, I was so over-joyed, that I was not able to express it, so fair and so beautiful did it a far off present it self unto me, a more pleasing sight did mine eyes never see; But when I was entred thereinto, and saw the spaciousnes of the streets, how streight and level they were, how plain and smooth, paved all with clean hewen stones of goodly fair marble, and their houses built with beautiful stones, so costly, so curious, so neatly polished, so artificially wrought, and with such a deal of skill and cunning in the Architecture thereof, I was so confounded, that I could not tell what to think of it. *Florence* is the flower of the world. But because night was now growing on, and that the day would not befriend us any longer, I was fain to retire my self to my lodging. And we were not slack in hastening to our Inn, whether when we were come, we were so neatly and so daintily entertained, that I cannot so much indear it, as it truly deserveth. Such plenty of provision, such cleanlines in their lodging-chambers, such sweetnes in their linnen, such diligent attendance, such affable language, and such good usage, did I never meet withall elsewhere in all my life.

When the morning was come, I called to *Sayavedra* to give me my clothes, and for that he was so well acquainted with that City, I willed him to make

himſelf ready to go along with me, that he might ſhow me all, whatſoever was of any note, and held (as curioſities) to be worth the ſeeing.

Chap. V.

Guzman *goes to* Bologna *in purſuit of* Alexandro, *who had ſtoln his trunks from him, and going about to impriſon* Alexandro, *himſelf was clapt up.*

IN *Florence*, I did eat out that horſe which my Lord Embaſſadour had beſtowed on me at my departure. If this heretick, *Neceſſity*, had not kicked me out of Town, I ſhould never have gone from thence. All was delight. In a word, in all places of the City whereſoever we came, we met with nothing but laudable exerciſes, and honeſt recreations. There might a man ſee many young Gallants, pompous in apparel, and richly clad and many fair Ladies and Gentlewomen, who wanted no ſetting forth for curious and coſtly dreſſings, with whom theſe young blouds did dance. Whoſe tyres on their heads were ſo daintily adorned, their gowns on their backs ſo richly imbroydered, and their *Chapines* to their feet, ſo plated with ſilver and beſet with precious ſtones, that they did raviſh both the eyes and the Souls of as many as did look upon them.

It grieved me very much to leave *Florence*, nor yet knew I, why I ſhould ſtay any longer there, unleſs it were to ſpend that poor little ſtore of money, that I had yet left me, and that chain, which

the Lord Embaſſadour my Maſter, gave me at my farewel, as a token of his Love; and as it was given me with a great deal of love, ſo did it exceedingly grieve me that I muſt ſhortly part ſo unkindly with it. I would, if I could, have kept it rather than my life, and never have parted from it. But patience (quoth I to my ſelf) I will do the beſt I can; and more I cannot. I conſidered with my ſelf, what would now become of me, and what courſe I were beſt to take, for to ſupply and relieve my wants. God help me. How heavy is the heart when the purſe is light? And therefore we ſay, a heavy purſe, makes a light heart. What little comfort do we take in the world? and how faint and feeble are the pleaſures of this life, to him whoſe purſe-ſtrings are too weak? and more particularly to one that is in a ſtrange Country, and that hath put on a reſolution with himſelf to forget his lewd courſes, and not to live as he had done, by tricks and by ſhifts; yet not knowing how to gain a penny, and wanting the means how to come by monie; having no neer acquaintance with any, to preſume of ſuch kindneſs from them, being far from my Friends, and further from any the leaſt intention or purpoſe to cheat or cozen any man, if I would have run that courſe, I needed not to have taken ſuch a deal of care and trouble in the buſineſs. For I had my wits about me; and a hand that was able to find me work all the year long; I could not want (if I liſted my ſelf) to pick out a living whereſoever I ſhould come. For (thanks be to God for it) what I had once learned it was mine own for ever. *I* never loſt it, if *I* once had it. Only *I* might at firſt be a little to ſeek for want of uſe, but the tools of my trade were never

never out of my hand, but alwaies carried them with me, whithersoever *I* went. *I* departed from *Rome* with a full purpose to become an honest man, and fall back, fall edge, come good, or come bad, all welcome, as it pleased God; for *I* had a great mind to continue these my good desires, and to remain firm in this so honest a resolution.

I assure thee, that the more *I* walked up and down that City, the more desirous *I* was to plant there my Pillars, and not to seek for a *Plus ultra*. But I was in a manner blown up, and all my money was almost spent. *I* thought it good counsel to uphold my honour, and to depart from thence, both to my credit and content, before that being forced thereunto by necessities, *I* should come to discover my wants, and be bound to stay still there, for lack of means to be gone. *I* acquainted *Sayavedra* with this my purpose. For by this time, *I* knew well enough that he was likely to be mine onely help at a pinch, my strong Fort, and the only trench whereunto *I* might with safety retire, and that I could not have met with such another companion in all the world for my purpose.

He said unto me. Seeing there is no remedy, but we must be gone, it is not much material which gate we got out at. Let us (if you will be ruled by me) take the way that leads to *Bologna*; for besides, that it is neer at hand, and that we shall there see that famous University, we may chance likewise to have the good luck to meet with *Alexandro Bentivoglio*, that Master of mine, who went away with the most part of your goods. For if we hap to find him there (as I verily believe we shall) it will be an easy matter for you to recover your own.

the Lord Embaſſadour my Maſter, gave me at my farewel, as a token of his Love; and as it was given me with a great deal of love, ſo did it exceedingly griev me that I muſt ſhortly part ſo unkindly with it. I would, if I could, have kept it rather than my life, and never have parted from it. But patience (quoth I to my ſelf) I will do the beſt I can; and more I cannot. I conſidered with my ſelf, what would now become of me, and what courſe I were beſt to take, for to ſupply and relieve my wants. God help me. How heavy is the heart when the purſe is light? And therefore we ſay, a heavy purſe, makes a light heart. What little comfort do we take in the world? and how faint and feeble are the pleaſures of this life, to him whoſe purſe-ſtrings are too weak? and more particularly to one that is in a ſtrange Country, and that hath put on a reſolution with himſelf to forget his lewd courſes, and not to live as he had done, by tricks and by ſhifts; yet not knowing how to gain a penny, and wanting the means how to come by monie; having no neer acquaintance with any, to preſume of ſuch kindneſs from them, being far from my Friends, and further from any the leaſt intention or purpoſe to cheat or cozen any man, if I would have run that courſe, I needed not to have taken ſuch a deal of care and trouble in the buſineſs. For I had my wits about me; and a hand that was able to find me work all the year long; I could not want (if I liſted my ſelf) to pick out a living whereſoever I ſhould come. For (thanks be to God for it) what I had once learned it was mine own for ever. *I* never loſt it, if *I* once had it. Only *I* might at firſt be a little to ſeek for want of uſe, but the tools of my trade were never

never out of my hand, but alwaies carried them with me, whithersoever *I* went. *I* departed from *Rome* with a full purpose to become an honest man, and *fall* back, fall edge, come good, or come bad, all welcome, as it pleased God; for *I* had a great mind to continue these my good desires, and to remain firm in this so honest a resolution.

I assure thee, that the more *I* walked up and down that City, the more desirous *I* was to plant there my Pillars, and not to seek for a *Plus ultra*. But I was in a manner blown up, and all my money was almost spent. *I* thought it good counsel to uphold my honour, and to depart from thence, both to my credit and content, before that being forced thereunto by necessities, *I* should come to discover my wants, and be bound to stay still there, for lack of means to be gone. *I* acquainted *Sayavedra* with this my purpose. For by this time, *I* knew well enough that he was likely to be mine onely help at a pinch, my strong Fort, and the only trench whereunto *I* might with safety retire, and that I could not have met with such another companion in all the world for my purpose.

He said unto me. Seeing there is no remedy, but we must be gone, it is not much material which gate we got out at. Let us (if you will be ruled by me) take the way that leads to *Bologna*; for besides, that it is neer at hand, and that we shall there see that famous University, we may chance likewise to have the good luck to meet with *Alexandro Bentivoglio*, that Master of mine, who went away with the most part of your goods. For if we hap to find him there (as I verily believe we shall) it will be an easy matter for you to recover your own.

I took this counſel, and was now fully reſolved to begin my journie; awaie goes *Sayavedra*, and *I* together, making directly for *Bolegna*; we came thither that night, but ſlept very little, for we ſpent the moſt part of it in plotting and caſting about how we ſhould bear our ſelves in this buſineſs. *Sayavedra* ſaies unto me, Sir *I* hold it not ſo fit, that *I* ſhould be ſeen herein at all, eſpecially now at this my firſt flight, but rather to lye cloſe a while, till we may ſee where it ſhould be beſt to give the wound; and when we ſhall come to know where the game lyes, and that there is any hope of doing good, then let us let flie, and ſtrike it dead. For if *Alexander* be in the Town, and ſhould know that I am here, (which he cannot chooſe, if I ſtir abroad, being ſo well known as I am,) hee will queſtion me, wherefore I came hither, and with whom? And that knowne, he will abſent himſelf forthwith from the Citie, and ſo we ſhall be defeated of our purpoſe. Or if he chance but to ſuſpect, that I had a finger in this buſineſſe, and that I was the cauſe of this journey, and his ſhame, there is no way but one with me, he will ſurely kill me; ſo that neither of theſe two will advantage us any thing, nor is fitting for us to be adventured on. Beſides, if this web muſt come to be woven in the Loom of Juſtice, I muſt be the Maſter threed to be wrought upon, there is no avoiding of it. The beſt courſe then to be taken, I conceive to be this; that to morrow morning you make inquiry after him, and by one means or other (with the beſt ſecrecie you can) ſeek firſt to know him, and to take particular notice of his perſon; That done, we will conſult thereof afreſh, and govern

our

our ſelves therein, according as occaſion and time ſhall ſerve.

I did not like amiſs of this, we thought it was good wholſom counſel. Well; as he had adviſed me. I ſet my ſelf to work, I walkt up and down the Town, and after the treading of ſome few ſteps, not being trobled (as fortune would have it) to tire out my legges in the ſearch of him, it was my good hap to have him pointed out unto me with the finger, telling me; Lo, that's the man. Which direction I needed not, for the cloathes on his back did ſpeak what he was, and without others teaching, could tell me, This is *Alexandro*. He was ſtanding amongſt other young men at the Church door.

He had at that time a doublet of mine on his back of cloth of ſilver, and a jerkin dreſt with Amber, and other rich perfumes, cut and ſlaſht clean thorow, and lined with the ſame cloth of ſilver, ſutable to the doublet, and richly laid with lace after the *Sevillian* faſhion, and eight Buttons of Gold wrought upon Amber, to make it ſit the cloſer to the collar, all which a Gentleman of *Naples* preſented me withal, for a certain diſpatch, that I had procured for him, by ſollicit ing his buſineſſe with my Lord Embaſſadour.

When I came to know mine own, and ſaw another man wear it before my face, I could have found in my heart to have ſtabb'd him, and preſently ſtript him of it, but I held my hand, and ſaid with my ſelf, No, *Guzman*, no; This muſt not be ſo; Better it were, that this thy thief ſhould be converted and live. For if thou let him live, he may chance to pay thee; But if thou kill him, thou art ſure to pay for him. If there be any order or law in gaming, and if the dice runn true, if the cards be

not packt, but are well ſhuffled and cut, and that there be fair play, unleſſe the devill be in it, or my luck exceeding bad, all the world cannot win the game from me. For I have cards enough in mine own hand to carry it. He is taken in the manner, the theft found about him, he cannot poſſibly deny it. I ſwear I will put him to his neck-verſe, and make him to confeſſe upon the Rack, who put him into thoſe fine cloathes, or in what Fair or Market he bought them.

Well, I got me home to my lodging, acquainting *Sayavedra* with what I had ſeen; when we had din'd, we pitcht the hey wherewith we were to catch this Coney; many deſignes we had, many means propounded to come by our own. We concluded in the end, that of all other means *Peace* were the beſt: And a bad Accord, is better than a good Plea. So that at laſt, we grew to his concluſion, that I, by a third perſon, ſhould uſe ſome means to have his father talkt withall, making him acquainted with the buſineſſe, and the whole manner how it was carried, giving him a large account of every particular thing, remitting my ſelf to his good will and pleaſure, how he in his own diſcretion ſhould think meet I deſerv'd to be dealt withall, and that he would not enforce me (conſidering my fair manner of proceeding with him) to recover mine own by rigour of Law, being there was *Evidentia facti*; beſides many other pregnant proofs to be produced, that theſe goods were mine. And ſo I did, as we had deviſed; having made choyce of a diſcreet perſon, who ſhould ſecretly and with fitting language, deliver thus much unto him. But he was ſo farr from compounding the buſineſſe, that he made little reckoning of it, deeming

deeming it as an *affront* done unto his honour, and a meer defamation.

When I receiv'd this anſwer, I reſolved to talk with ſome Lawyer; to whom I opening my caſe, He plainly told me; Sir, it is well enough known in this Town, what manner of man *Alexandro* is, as alſo his lewd and idle courſes, which in ſome other place, would be a ſufficient information againſt him. Beſides, there is ſo much truth in that which you urge againſt him, that *I* would adviſe you to frame an information againſt him, and to deſire juſtice.

Whereupon, *I* being very deſirous that a bill ſhould be exhibited againſt him, he preſently (according to my information) drew one out, which *I* forthwith preſented to the *Auditore del Torrone*, who is there the judge of all Cauſes Criminal. But, whether it were immediately from the Judge himſelf, or from the Notarie, *I* know not, but ſure *I* am, that this buſineſs of mine was inſtantly over all the Town, and particular notice was given thereof unto *Alexandro*'s father: he hies him in all haſt to the Judge, and there accuſing me for this my bold attempt, and inconſiderate raſhneſs, (as it pleaſed him to term it) he formed a complaint againſt me, that *I* had defamed, and diſhonoured his Houſe, and that therefore he was of purpoſe come unto him to deſire his lawful favour, and that he would be pleaſed to do him juſtice, to the end that *I* might be ſeverely puniſhed for this my preſumption. *I* know not how, but the matter was ſo carried between them, that it had been better for me to have held my peace. And in many places, as a man is befriended, ſo his cauſe is ended.

The

The Judge did limit me a prefixed time for my proofs, but ſo ſhort that it was not poſſible for me to make my information according to that ſcantling, when I did allege for my ſelf, that the information was to come from *Siena*, where the theft was committed.

Well, being not able to bring in my proofs in ſo ſhort a time, my Bill of Complaint was thrown out of the Court, and held as a thing of no validity or force in Law, and that of the adverſe party, took place againſt me; declaring there in Court, that *I* by this my Petition had framed an infamous Libell againſt his ſon, by meanes whereof, his Houſe, and his honour was much defamed; adding, that *I* did it wittingly and willingly, impudently and maliciouſly, aggravating the matter againſt me with all the odious termes they could deviſe; Alleging farther againſt me, that for as much as his ſon, was a quiet, honeſt, and peaceable Gentleman, and of a good both report, and life, *I* did deſerve *I* know not what exemplary punſhment, hanging, burning, and drowning, all was too litle. Which things, when they were read unto me, I ſaid to my ſelf; Theſe men may have healthy bodies, but *I* am ſure they have ſick ſouls; they may have good purſes, but *I* finde (to my coſt) they have bad Conſciences. I was careleſs, (as one that was confident of a good cauſe) and as *I* was afterwards going about my buſineſs, I was taken up in the midſt of the ſtreet by an Arreſt, and preſently carried away to priſon. They puniſht me as an unmannerly man of my tongue, a liar, and a lewd companion. *I* had ſpent my moneys, loſt my goods, put in priſon, gyves clapt on my legs, treated with evil language, upbraiding me with many

Guzman clapt in priſon.

many foul and uncivil reproaches, without ſuffering me to open my mouth in mine one defence. When I would have anſwered their objections by writing, my Proctor forſook me, my Solicitour would not come at me, my Advocate refuſed to plead for me.

A priſon is a true and lively picture of Hell it ſelf; my advice is to leave off theſe idle thoughts of going to Law, ſit down rather with loſſe, and live in peace: For it is better that the world ſhould ſay of thee that thou art a patient wiſe man, than a revengeful fool. Neglect him that hath wronged thee, and let him go for a knave as he is; for thou canſt not take a fuller revenge of him, nor puniſh him more than to let him paſſe for an idle fool, and follow thine own buſineſſe.

Good counſel for thoſe that will live at quiet.

CHAP. VI.

Guzman *being freed out of priſon, falls a gaming, gets money;*

WHen I came out of priſon, I got me to my lodging, being as ſad and melancholy, as I was poor and miſerable: ſaying to *Sayavedra*, what doſt thou think of the good market that we have made in this Fair. He told me, Sir, I ſee how things are carried, for *I* have been an eye-witneſſe of all that hath paſt; but what remedy is there againſt the force and power of the potent: was it to be imagined, or once to be ſuſpected by us, that ſuch a buſineſs as this, ſo fair, and ſo full of truth, ſhould prove ſo quite oppoſite to our underſtanding.

Guzman comes heavy and melancholy out of priſon.

Whileſt

Whileſt we were thus talking on this matter, there comes me a couple of gueſts that were ſtrangers into the Inne, challenged by a young man of that Citie, to play at Cards. And in a little ſquare room, that divided their chamber from mine, they had ſet up a table, and to play they go. Now I walking up and down that way, in my paſſing to and fro, ſeeing what paſt among them, *I* was deſirous (for to entertain the time, and to drive away melancholy) to draw nearer unto them, and to look upon them. *I* did ſo, and pulling a ſtool unto me, taking that which came firſt to hand, I ſate me down, viewing one of their hands for the ſpace of ſome two houres, or more, in all which time there was little or nothing loſt on either part. The money went to and fro; loſing one while and getting another; fortune had ſhow'd her ſelf ſo equal, that ſhe had made them in a manner all fayers; Continuing their play, within a little while after, the Sea began to ſwell, the waves grew high, and the money began to ſwim from one ſide of the board to the other; their blood waxed hot, and their choler began to kindle, they were now at their cloſe fight, watching their advantages to board, or ſink each other, they grapled hard for it on all ſides, and the Cards likewiſe they plaid their parts, and laid about them for life, beſtirring themſelves luſtily, and gave one of them ſuch a blow on the head with his club, that he was ſtrucken over board, and he and all his money ſunk, having loſt in that fight above a hundred Crownes. And this man, that had that great blow given him, was he in whoſe hand I lookt. Of whoſe loſs I was as ſenſible, as if the caſe had been mine own; thinking with my ſelf, that I had brought him this ill luck

luck, and that I was the inſtrument of this his bad fortune. Which did grieve me ſo much the more, for that I underſtood, that he was not worth in all the world ſo much more, as he had then loſt.

Gaming ought to be uſed for two ends; either for meer gain, or to entertain the time. If for gain, I ſay nothing unto it, ſave *Capiat qui capere poteſt*: catch, he that can catch; Let every one arm his own ſhip as well as he can, and have an eye to the bullets that flie about his ears.

They that play for entertainment, ſhould be only ſuch, whom the Cards themſelves do mark and point out unto us: In them conſider the *Kings*, the *Queens*, and the *Knaves*; giving us thereby to underſtand, that none ſhould play thereat but *Kings*, *Queens*, and *Knaves*. I can aſſure you, that in all the whole pack of Cards, you meet not with any Merchant, Tradeſ-men, Lawyers, nor Divines, for they are not befitting their profeſſions.

The Coat-cards are called in Spaine, Rey, Caballo, y Sota. *The firſt is the King, as with us; The ſecond ſignifies a Knight, which is all one with our Queen; And the third a Souldier, which is the ſame with our Knave.*

This my man, was one of the gueſts to the houſe where I lay; the quarrel ceaſed for that time, and a freſh challenge was made againſt after ſupper. And ſo they brake off, the winners going each their way, as their ſeveral occaſions lay; and the loſer, to look out more money; but he could not (it ſhould ſeem) get any money, yet he came thither, though without it, more offended with thoſe that would not lend it him, than with thoſe who had got it from him. He went walking and raging up and down the room, puffing and blowing like a Bull. One while he walks athwart it, another, ſtalks along from one end to the other, then again flings me from one corner to the other corner, huffing and chafing, nothing could content him, all

was

was vexation of ſpirit, he ralles upon the City, and upon that traytor that was the cauſe of his coming thither, that that was no Countrey for honeſt men to dwell in, but for theeves and cutthroats, being that he had in that Town, an hundred known friends, and all of them rich and well moneyed men, yet could he not borrow one Royal of them all, and began to ſwear that he would do this, and that, and I know not what, if it ſhould be his hap to meet with any of them in his own Countrey. *I* gave him the hearing, and held my peace.

I called *Sayavedra* aſide, and told him what occaſion was offered? Tell me thy opinion? Shall it not be well done, that after ſupper, when the ſame company ſhall meet again together, wanting a third to maintain the combate, *I* ſhould come forth as a challenger into the liſt, adventuring to run my Lance amongſt the reſt, putting my ſelf upon fortune, either to loſe or win the honour of the day, by hazarding thoſe few crownes that I have? *Sayavedra* ſaid, That he had ſet up his reſt to do me ſervice. We were then driven very low, and almoſt brought to beggers buſh; Wherefore he would marſhal things in that manner, that both ſafely, and ſubtilly, he would all over the field, and evermore give me advice of my adverſaries forces, and how and where their ſtrength lay, and when I was to charge them home, as likewiſe to make my retreat; having ſaid thus, I was for very joy, ready to leap out of it my ſelf; for my ability at play, and the skill and cunning that I had in handling the Cards, being holpen by his advice, there was no doubt to be made, but that I might eaſily convert three parts of their money to mine

own,

own, I did desire this base action should proceed rather out of his mouth, than mine. For otherwise, if this trick should have been plaid out of mine hand, *Sayavedra* would haply have said to himself, See, what a fine Master I serve! *I* have rid my self of a thief, and have lighted upon a cheater. He and *I* were disputing a great while with our selves, which signes would be best, whereby we might come to know both the others hands; And at last it was resolved on, that the best manner of doing it, would be by the buttons of his jerkin, or the joynts of the fingers, according to the art of the Gammuth, when we learn first to sing: And having made trial thereof some three or four bouts, we grew so ready and so perfect therein, that we now understood one another better by these our tokens, than our tongues.

Now were the challengers entered the lists, whil'st I was walking up and down there in the room. They began to talk of falling a fresh to play; whereupon, the third man told them what had passed, and that he could not meet with those his friends that should have furnisht him with money, but if they would trust him upon his word, till the next day morning, see, whatsoever he should lose unto them upon the ticket, he would truly pay them. The Citizen said, there was no heart in it, and that it was a kinde of dull and tedious sport, and that he had never any good luck, but did alwayes lose, when he plaid upon the Ticket. And the other would by no means give way thereunto. Whereupon the company was a breaking off, *I* stept forth and said unto them; Since this Gentleman doth not play, so as you will not play to great play, if it please you, *I* will put my self

upon the Cards, and trie for a while how well they will deal with me. The other two, were very glad of this, the motion pleas'd them paſſing well; for they took me to be ſome young Thruſh. Making reckoning, that all was their own, if they got me into play. And for that they thought, if *I* ſhould chance to loſe my money, I would alſo venture my chaine (which *I* of purpoſe diſcovered unto them by unbuttoning my jerkin,) and that *I* would not have the patience to give over, but throw the pot-hookes after the pot, and the helve after the hatchet.

I called *Sayavedra*, and ſaid unto him; Go fetch me ſome money, if you have any ſilver left, bring it me quickly. He preſently drew out an hundred Royals, which *I* had given him before. that he might have them in readineſſe, when *I* called for them. He abiding a while in my chamber, till our play grew a little warme, and then calling him to ſnuff the candles, *I* ſaid unto him, ſeeming as if *I* had been angry with him; Are we to be uſed thus by thee? Have you ſo much buſineſs to do in the chamber, or are you ſo drowſie-headed, that you cannot ſtay here in the room, if we ſhould at any time have occaſion to uſe you? He ſaid never a word, but ſtood ſtill, and held his peace, in ſo much that no man in the world would have once ſuſpected any harme from him, for he never offered ſo much as to caſt an eye upon me, nor did he at any time remove his hand from his boſome, by which meanes he gave me true knowledge how their games went. And howbeit, we underſtood one another well enough. I would ſometimes of purpoſe ſeem not to underſtand him, nor would I make uſe of his wary advice, but when I had won

two

two or three hands, *I* took pleaſure now and then to loſe a little. *I* did ſuffer them now and then to draw my money; but neither much, nor often, leſt when they had me on the life, they might have left off: *I* was content they ſhould touch it, but not enter upon it; and afterwards *I* would charge them home, that *I* might, having once netled them, egge them on the more. *I* did skirmiſh with them in that cunning manner, that I made them ſtill come on more and more eager upon my money. But when *I* began to ſuſpect, that they would give over the fight, and ſound a retreat, and that they were to leave the field, and be gone, I then thought fit to purſue them to ſome purpoſe, and to follow the chaſe a little more hotly, till *I* ſaw them ſafe in the net, and had them in mine hands, to do what I would with them, and then did I ſet roundly upon them and their money, bringing it all under my ſubjection in a very ſhort ſpace, few blows being ſtrucken in the battle. I had got of thoſe two, all that they had gained of the other before. Whereof they were ſo aſhamed, and ſo ſtung withall, that they ſwore they would have another bout with me the next day, challenging me again at the ſame game. *I* willingly accepted of it. They came, we play'd, and *I* was willing to let them winn ſome thirtie Crowns of me, which they carryed away with them, giving over play for that time; for, this loſſe, was but a bait that I layd for them, knowing that this would fleſh them, and put them in heart a-new, and make them come on bravely at the next meeting. Yet one of them was willing to coutinue longer, and ſaid; Let us play greater game, for that the night grows late. Nay (quoth I) by the ſame reaſon, it were better that we go

now to bed, and meet again to morrow, which if you like of it, and be at leasure, we may come together somewhat sooner, and taking the day before us, we may play at pleasure, and as long as we list. They were wondrous glad to hear me say so, and that they had yet lost somewhat unto me, hoping in the end that they should get more by me.

The next day they came, with their purses well armed with double Pistolets, well appointed for warr, they threw down whole handfulls of them upon the boord, some being peeces of two, some of four, and some of ten. Saying, as they flung them down; *Coraggio, coraggio,* (*Sennor Soldado*) see you what here is, to be spent in your service. We began to play; and I went wearying of them out by little and little, giving them line enough to run themselves out of breath, and when I saw, that I had now brought them even with me, and that *I* might strike them both dead at once, *I* let fly a whole volly of shot at them, and in a few hours, I saw in these hands of mine above five hundred Crowns, which yeelded themselves up to my mercy, whom (out of the pitifulnesse of my nature) *I* took into my protection. The main battell being thus overthrown, my two Captains were fain to forsake the field, and to trie if they could levie fresh men, and raise new forces to encounter me again the next day, promising to bid me battell if I durst abide it. I was not a little glad to hear them say so, as well for that I had let them blood both alike; as also, for that my heart was now pretty well and quiet; holding my self very well pleas'd with that he had gotten of them, being as well contented, as if I had won all that they had been

been worth. For I had enough to ſerve my turn, and what ſhould I deſire more? But fearing, that this Towns-man, might put a Town-trick upon me, and that the ſtranger being in need, and in want might do me ſome wrong (for I was lately, to my great coſt, too well acquainted what good juſtice a man was to look for in that Citie) *I* told *Sayavedra*, when we were alone by our ſelves, that without any word ſpeaking, or telling any body, whether we intended to go, we would take horſe betimes in the morning, and poſt with all ſpeed to *Millain*. And ſo we did.

CHAP. III.

Guzman *travelling towards* Millain, Sayavedra *upon the way, recounts, his own Life unto him*

WE rode towards *Millain*, *I* called to *Sayavedra*, and ſaid unto him; Come, let us talk of ſome thing or other to paſſe away the time; or do thou tell me ſome ſtory upon the way, to give me content; it will make our journey the ſhorter. He ſaid.

I wiſh Sir, that *I* could tell you a tale, how glad *I* was, and what a deal of good it did do me, to taſt of the ſweeteſt of your gain. But *I* am ſo confident of the nobleneſſe of your diſpoſition, and this my coming to ſerve you ſhall not be only for ſatisfaction of the debt, wherein *I* ſtand bound unto you, but alſo make much for my profit; Whereupon *I* thus replyed.

Friend *Sayvedra* What is paſt, is paſt; and there is no more to be ſaid of it; for there is no man, that doth not ſlip in one kind or other. We live all in the fleſh; and all fleſh is weak. And let him be vvho, or vvhat he vvill, (had he found himſelf in that great vvant and miſery, as vve vvere) he vvould have done the like, as vve have done: vvhich vvas no better than plain theft, to coozen theſe poor men, of that little they had.

And for that *I* perceive thou haſt underſtanding and iudgment to apprehend any thing, *I* perſvvade my ſelf thou doeſt likevviſe comprehend, that I am no Trader in the *Indies*, but a poor young man, (as thou art) robbed of his ſubſtance, and deprived of his neceſſaries, I muſt endevour therefore to maintain my ſelf, in ſome reaſonable faſhion. For albeit *I* ſerved that Lord of mine, the French Embaſſadour, and lived in houſe vvith him, it vvas out of that love, vvhich he bore unto me from a child, and upon the earneſt intreatie, that he made to my friends; my father, and he, being of ancient acquaintance. And ſo he begg'd me of him, ſaying; he ſhould take no more care of me, and that he vvould one day make me a man.

But ſince that things have ſo fallen out with me, (as in part you your ſelf know) I am not minded to return thither any more, till I have ſeen ſomewhat of the world, and that *I* may come home rich and in plenty, and be able to live in eaſe and pleaſure, all the reſt of my life, every one ſeeks to advance himſelf and his fortunes, as high as he can. The King, ſeeks to augment his State, and enlarge his Kingdome: The Gentleman, to raiſe his Houſe: The Merchant to encreaſe his wealth; and the Tradeſ-man, to gain his Trade. And ſince thou

Every man would fain live.

thou ſay'ſt, that thou lov'ſt my company, and tak'ſt much contentment therein, and that thou lik'ſt ſo well of it, I hope, it ſhall neither be hurtful unthee, nor hard to brook it, I know how to value and make a true eſteem of thoſe kindeneſſes which are done unto me; the thankful acknowledgment thereof, I ſhall refer to my actions, which in their due time, ſhall teſtifie, what I now profeſs, but becauſe reward is the ſpur, which puts vertue forward; and the onely whetſtone, that ſets an edge on mens affections; making them to go on bravely and courageouſly in all that they undertake; it is fit, and no more than what is juſt, that every man ſhould have a proportionable and equal gain, according to the quality of his adventure: And *I* am very well content that all that vvhich ſhall fall, or come unto our hands, as vvell thoſe fruits already fallen, as thoſe that are to fall hereafter, ſhall be divided into three equal parts; of all vvhich thou ſhalt have one part for thee, and another for me, and the third ſhall go for to defray the charges of *averige*, for it vvill not be alvvaies faire vveather; nor ſhall vve ſtill ſaile before the vvinde; nor make evermore a ſpeedy voyage; as it happens vvhen men are becalmed at Sea; and vvhen vve ſhall land and come aſhore, it is not fit that vve ſhould vvant cloaths, and other neceſſaries, nor muſt vve, if the enemy ſhould ſet upon us, be unprovided of munition to defend our ſelves, and offend him; nor, ſhould vve chance by ſome ſtorme or other accident, to be caſt upon ſome ſhelfe or quickſand, muſt vve lack a boat to put our, vvherein to ſave our lives, though vve loſe our goods. This third part, vve vvill ſtill lay apart by it ſelf, that ſhall be, as it vvere the

Guzman *purpoſes to to provide for a deer year, and ſhowes how it may be done.*

Ærarium, and publick Treasury, our common purse, for to supply and relieve our necessaries. For if we go wisely and discreetly to work, and be not rash and inconsiderate in our actions, seeing we want not understanding, and have some skill in Navigation, I for my part will content my self with no less, than some good place of command in my Country, and such good store of wealth, that I may afterwards live happily all the daies of my life. And all this will I bring about, before I be six years elder. Be therefore of good courage, and take heart unto thee, for thou shalt make the like purchase, wherewith thou maist return with credit to *Valencia*. I would not have thee busie thy self with base thefts, nor be one of those sneaking thieves, that steal Primers, Horn books and Ballads, or Print other mens coppies, for from such kinde of thefts, thou shalt reap no other profit, but infamie, and reproach. In a word, let us bravely resolve, *Morir ahorcados, o comer con trompetas*; either to hang together for company, or to have our dinner served in with Trumpets. Let us die like dogs, or live like men. For a mans life is ended in a day; but poverty is a daily death. And if we go on as we have begun, and use these and the like tricks, we shall with a little practice, grow to greater both cunning, and wealth, and bid a fart in Fears teeth; For all moneths are alike, be they fair or foule, every one hath his thirty daies, and no more; every one must be content with his fortune; And for as much, as in the dark, all *Cats* are black, and *Joan* is as faire as my Lady; we will so carry things in the clouds, that we may not appear in our right colours. We two will joyne together, keep counsell, and deal fairly one with another

other, dividing the ſpoile equally, that there may be no falling out betwixt us: For, one Wolfe, will not bite another. Lo here, if thou wilt, thou ſhalt preſently, before we go any further, have a third part of what is already got; for it is not juſt and honeſt. to debar any man of his right, or to with-hold that from him, which is his. Much good may it do thee; and thank God, that with ſo fortunate a foot, and ſo propitious a ſtar, thou haſt lighted thus happily into our company.

With this kinde of language, and my liberal carriage, I went ſecuring his perſon unto me, that he might not forſake me, but ſtay, and live with me. For if I ſhould have ſought over all the world for a Marriner, I could not have met with a better Mate for my Barke. He, upon theſe good words of mine, was ſo overcome, that he reſted no leſs contented, than conquerd by me. And ſo falling in our future diſcourſe, from one thing to another, I hapt at laſt to ask him the cauſe, that mov'd him to rob me? Sir, ſaid he, though I would yet I can't now forbear, to acquaint you with the whole courſe of my life, and truly and faithfully to deliver unto you every particular paſſage thereof, as well for thoſe favours which I have ſo liberally received already from your hand, as alſo for that it is well enough known to the world, and therefore requires no ſuch ſecreſie, that I am of *Valencia*, born of honeſt parents, (whom report may one day make known unto you) for they (God be praiſed) are now both dead; only their fame liveth. We were two brothers, and both unfortunate, for laying aſide all reſpects of honour, and to apply our ſelves to any ſet courſe of life, more out of a deſire to ſee ſtrange Countreys, than to get ſome honeſt means, where-

Sayavedra *diſcourſes to* Guzman *of his courſe of life.*

by

by to live, we went out into the wide world to seek our fortunes. But because things might not chance to fall out so luckily with us, as we did frame to our selves, and that if we should come in trouble, we might not be known, nor dishonor our House, we did agree between our selves, to change and alter our names.

My brother call'd himself *Mateo Luxan*. In this manner, did he wander thorow the world; and the world saith, that it gave him the same payment; as it did me. I knowing that the *Sayavedra's* were of principal note, and ancient Gentlemen of *Sevil*, *I* stiled my self to be of that City, and took their name upon me. But *I* was never in *Sevil*, nor knew any more thereof, than what I have said already.

Being thus new christned, we set forth on one, and the same day, and began our travels together, but went each of us a several way. Some have told me, who knew him by sight, that they have seen him in *Castile*, and in *Andaluzia* very hardly used: and that from thence, he went to the *Indies*, where it also went ill with him. I shaped my course another way; for *I* got me to *Barcelona*, where in the Galleys I past over into *Italy*: I had spent all that, which *I* had brought along with me from home, and at last became exceeding poor. And because necessity doth often-times, drive a man to do that, which he never dream't of, *I* chanced in the end to arrive in the Kingdome of *Naples*.

I travell'd all over that Kingdome, spending that which *I* had not, till *I* came to be a notable *Picaro*, and began at length to converse with as arrant Rogues as my self; and from one round to ano-

another I grew up by degrees, to be a fine nimble finger'd Fuller, I could teazell cloaths ſingular well, I could pick a pocket very nea ly, and cut a purſe handſomely, and do many the like fine feats. I made my ſelf a *Camerade* with thoſe that were the Maſters of our Company, and had recourſe alwayes unto them, that they might cover me under their wings in time of adverſitie; I was but their ſervant, and one of thoſe ordinary Souldiers as it were, that fought under their Enſigne. For my poverty was ſo great, that I could never get me a ſtock to put me into cloaths, or to be able to ſet up ſhop for my ſelf; there was not ſuch a cunning ſharker amongſt them all, as I was; my ſheers would find an edge, when theirs would not cut; they were all bunglers to me; *I* was able to have read unto them all thoſe Lectures of thieving, conycatching and cheating, which I read for my degree, when *I* proceeded Batcheler in that Art. None of them underſtood half ſo well as *I*, the Art in cuting of a purſe; nor to dive into a pocket, ſo deep, as I could. *I* was an old dog at it, and could diſpatch my buſineſſe in a trice. Mine eye, and mine hand, went both together; they were here and there, and every where, with a *preſto* be gone, I was of all occupations; a Marriner, a Miller, a Baker, a Scout, a Croſſe-biter, one of your up-right men, a Cheater, a Coozener, a Fox, that was full of craft and ſubtiltie.

But by reaſon of their ancient ſtanding, and the reputation they had got in thoſe former dunſicall times, they tyrannized and uſurped on the name of famous profeſſours: Theſe were the *Cæſars*; and we the poor rogues; whom they ſent abroad, from houſe to houſe, to ſcowre diſhes, to caſt an

eye in every corner, to make one excuſe or other whereſoever we came; demanding in one place, whether ſuch a Gentleman were there or noe: and in another, whether they wanted a young youth, that was willing to ſerve them. Asking ſuch a Gentlewoman, whether ſhe would buy a pair of Twizes: which but a little before, we had cut from another Gentlewomans girdle, and having new ground and whet them, and made them very neat and clean, and fitted them with a new caſe, and a new ribond, we ſold them afterwards avvay for nevv vvare. Sometimes, vve vvould make ſhovv to go into ſome houſe to make vvater, and if vve found, that there vvas a ſtable there, or other by roomes belonging to it, in thither vvould vve go, vvhere vve ſhould meet vvith a horſe cloth, a curry-combe, a ſieve, or the horſe mans cloak, vve ſhould evermore be ſure of bridles, and collars, and ſtirrops, and the like kind of tackling for their Mules and their Hackneys, and if by misfortune, any one ſhould come in, and ſee us there, looſing preſently our cod-piſſe point, vve would ſquat us down in a corner in the ſtable, as if we had been driven in thither by neceſſity to do that ſervice, which no body can do for us but our ſelves. And in caſe they ſhould ſay unto us (as now and then they would) you rogue, you thief, what make you here? We would then preſently riſe up, and pulling up our breeches to make them faſt, and be gone, we would while we were a truſſing, mildly make anſwer; I pray Sir be not offended; take heed to whom, and of what you ſpeake; for here is no ſuch kind of man, as you talk of, no thief, no rogue, but one that is true and honeſt, and meanes you no harm: I was over-taken in the

ſtreet

ſtreet, and forced to come in upon meer neceſſitie, and therefore I hope you will hold me excuſed

I was a pretty little wagg, ſlender of growth, rather lean than otherwiſe, very wittie, full of invention, and above all, as nimble, and light-footed as a Buck. *I* always laid wait in the day-time, how and where I ſhould compaſſe my exployts in the night. *I*n the day time we did (like good Chriſtians) viſit Churches, go to Maſſe, hear Sermons, frequent your Indulgencies, *I*ubilees, Feaſts, and Proceſſions. We were preſent at your play-houſes, and Courts of Juſtice, at all Executions, and all other publick meetings and aſſemblies, where there was any concourſe of people, any preſſing or thronging in the ſtreets, ſtriving to be alwayes in the thickeſt of the croud, entring in and out amongſt them, paſſing to and fro a thouſand times. One while we brought away daggers, ſtoln from mens backs; other-while hand-kercheirs pickt out of their pockets; purſes, *roſarios*, *twizes*, jewels worne by women; and ſuch odde toyes as your children wear about their necks. And when all failed and that *I* could not make all that purchaſe as I would, with my ſheers (which I had ever ready in my hand) look where the beſt and faireſt cloak was in all the company: I did whip from behind, or the one ſide of it (if by chance it ſlipt of from his ſhoulders in the throng) as much as would make three or four pair of ſoles, or ſome ſuch odde knack, or other.

We would cunningly ſteal to your ſilk, or cloth of gold-hangings; and from the lower part of thoſe hangings, would we ſnip of a peece or two, according as occaſion, or time, would give us leave: and in the turning of an hand, we made thereof either

either womens bodies, mens *monteras*, purſes, pin-pillows, ſleeves for little children, and a thouſand the like fidling things.

And for your great Fairs and Markets, we will not ſtick, for a need, to come an hundred miles off, that we may be preſent at them. Our expence upon the way, was alwayes very little; for we ſtill made our proviſion, as we went along, and what we got in one place, that we ſpent in another, taking up hens here, capons there, in ſuch a Village chickens, and ſuch a Dove-houſe pigeons, piggs, gammons of Bacon, and any thing that was tame, and would come to hand; Which that we might do with the more conveniencie, and leſſer hazard of our perſons, we would begin to beg an alms, ſaying: That we were poor Students, and being driven to great neceſſity, could not for want of means return handſomely into our own Countrey, Which we did not ſo much demand of them, to the end they ſhould give us any thing, as thereby to ſeek occaſion to ſteal ſomething from them, having an eye ſtill towards the hen-rooſt.

Beſides, for your *Inns*, and your Farmers backſides, I carried alwayes with me a good angle-rod with a ſtrong hook and line, baited with a cruſt of bread, or ſome ſix grains of wheat, to catch therewith whatſoever come in my way. and I ſeldom put in my rod, but I pluckt out a fiſh as long as mine arme. But came the worſt, that could come, we ſhould be ſure to meet with as good and fat a Calf, as any man need to eat, the world could not afford better Veal. As ſoon as we came to *Naples*, at our firſt coming wee drave for ſome few dayes, a very good trade. I had put my ſelf into ſuch apparell that my preſence might promiſe

the

the reputation of an honeſt man.

One of my Camerades was of that Countrey, ſervant to a regent of that Collaterall Counſell, he was deſirous to make himſelf known unto him, whereupon he went to kiſſe his hands, nor did his own return empty from him; But (being very glad to ſee him) offered to do him any kindneſſe that lay in his power. And preſently, without any more adoe, he employ'd him in ſome buſineſſe, and thoſe of ſome worth and moment, and well deſerving a worthier ſubject.

I went one day and caſt mine eye upon a very fair houſe, which at the firſt ſight ſeemed unto me, to belong to ſome honourable perſon, or principall Gentleman of that Citie. I entred as boldly into it, as if the houſe had been mine own.

I lookt about on this ſide, and on that ſide. At laſt it was my fortune to ſpy lying on the top of a little ſide-table, a fair black velvet Kirtle, richly embroydered, which would very well ſerve to make three ſeverall ſorts of garments, caſſock, and hoſe, and ſomething elſe beſides; for there were full fifteen yards in it, and might very well beſeem the wearing of the neateſt and braveſt Gallants in the Kingdom. I took it up, and clapping it under mine arme, fetching two or three nimble friſcals, my feet were preſently upon the threſhold of the door, making their way to go forth into the ſtreet. But *I* was no ſooner come thither, but there *I* met full butt with the owner of the houſe, who was Maſter *Datario*, a man of great place and authority in the City, who ſeeing me come forth with this fardle under mine arme, asked me what *I* was, what I made there, and what it was that *I* carried away with me, but with an untroubled, or rather cheerfull

cheerfull countenance. I ſaid unto him; Sir, it is my miſtreſſes pleaſure, that I ſhould untuck theſe plates a little, to make the fold fall a little handſomer, and that I ſhould leſſen it a thought in the waſt. for that it fits not well before; and hath given me a charge to diſpatch it preſently. Do ſo I pray (my friend) quoth he, ſee it be done quickly, and let it be your own hand-working, that it may not be don amiſs,& make all the haſt you can. I hi'd me down the ſtreet, tuming ſometimes this way, and ſometimes that way, now here, and then there, and all, that they might not find any footing of me, if he ſhould chance to uncouple his hounds, and ſend them after me to follow me upon the hot ſent.

He was no ſooner come into the houſe, but he found it all in an uprore, brauling and calling one to another, give me the Kirtle; give me the Kirtle, where is the Kirtle, what is become of the Kirtle? you took it from my miſtreſſe, (ſaies one) I laid it here, (ſayes another.) I left it here (ſaies a third.) Then falls the Miſtreſſe of the houſe a chiding, asking who came in, or out? No body could tell of any; Then (quoth ſhe) it is likely, that ſome of the houſe muſt needs have it, therefore look it me out, and that quickly too, or elſe you ſhall ſoundly pay for it. There was ſuch an out-cry, ſuch exclamations, ſuch a howling, ſuch a bawling, and ſo hideous a noyſe, as if the whole houſe had been fallen to the ground; in ſo much, that they could not one underſtand another.

In this hurly-burly comes me in the maſter of the houſe, acknowledging the error, that he had committed, in letting me go away in that faſhion. Preſently he made ſearch after me, but by this time I had

had both ſecured my perſon, and the Kirtle.

That night I got me to the houſe of a great Conſtable, out of a deſire that I had to finiſh a peece of work, which ſome few dayes before, I had drawn out. Many Gentlemen, were there met together to play, who had ordinarily three or four tables ſet ready for them, and a page, or two appointed to ſit up, and attend upon them, till they gave over. Every table had his ſilk carpet, and two ſilver candleſticks; *I* carried thither with me a couple that were counterfeit, made of the pureſt Tin I could get, and juſt of the ſame faſhion and proportion, and ſo like in every reſpect, that you could not for their fineneſſe, diſtinguiſh them from the other, provided of purpoſe, for the better affecting of what I intended. I carried likewiſe two candles along with me, and uſing cloſe conveyance, that they might not be ſeen about me, I leaned againſt one of the corners of the wall, as I had uſed heretofore, waiting for a fair occaſion to bring my project to paſs, giving thoſe that were there to underſtand, that I was a ſervant to one of thoſe Gentlemen that were at play. Two, were playing at *Zienros*, at one of thoſe tables, they call'd for lights, there was not any body there but one Page, and he ſo ſleepie and ſo drouſie, that having call'd unto him twice, he did neither anſwer them, nor well mind what they ſaid unto him: I made preſently in to them, and having my candles and candleſticks in a redineſſe, which were not long a lighting, throwing one end of my cloak over my ſhoulder, as if I had been one of the ſervants of the houſe: I ſhifted the candleſticks, putting the lights into thoſe that I had brought with me, clapping thoſe other of ſilver under mine arme: and ſo

cheerfull countenance. I ſaid unto him; Sir, it is my miſtreſſes pleaſure, that I ſhould untuck theſe plates a little, to make the fold fall a little handſomer, and that I ſhould leſſen it a thought in the waſt. for that it fits not well before; and hath given me a charge to diſpatch it preſently, Do ſo I pray (my friend) quoth he, ſee it be done quickly, and let it be your own hand-working, that it may not be don amiſs,& make all the haſt you can. I hi'd me down the ſtreet, tuming ſometimes this way, and ſometimes that way, now here, and then there, and all, that they might not find any footing of me, if he ſhould chance to uncouple his hounds, and ſend them after me to follow me upon the hot ſent.

He was no ſooner come into the houſe, but he found it all in an uprore, brauling and calling one to another, give me the Kirtle; give me the Kirtle, where is the Kirtle, what is become of the Kirtle? you took it from my miſtreſſe, (ſaies one) I laid it here, (ſayes another.) I left it here (ſaies a third.) Then falls the Miſtreſſe of the houſe a chiding,asking who came in,or out? No body could tell of any; Then (quoth ſhe) it is likely, that ſome of the houſe muſt needs have it, therefore look it me out, and that quickly too, or elſe you ſhall ſoundly pay for it. There was ſuch an out-cry, ſuch exclamations, ſuch a howling, ſuch a bawling, and ſo hideous a noyſe, as if the whole houſe had been fallen to the ground; in ſo much, that they could not one underſtand another.

In this hurly-burly comes me in the maſter of the houſe, acknowledging the error, that he had committed, in letting me go away in that faſhion. Preſently he made ſearch after me,but by this time I had

had both ſecured my perſon, and the Kittle.

That night I got me to the houſe of a great Conſtable, out of a deſire that I had to finiſh a peece of work, which ſome few dayes before, I had drawn out. Many Gentlemen, were there met together to play, who had ordinarily three or four tables ſet ready for them, and a page, or two appointed to ſit up, and attend upon them, till they gave over. Every table had his ſilk carper, and two ſilver candleſticks; *I* carried thither with me a couple that were counterfeit, made of the pureſt Tin I could get, and juſt of the ſame faſhion and proportion, and ſo like in every reſpect, that you could not for their fineneſſe, diſtinguiſh them from the other, provided of purpoſe, for the better affecting of what I intended. I carried likewiſe two candles along with me, and uſing cloſe conveyance, that they might not be ſeen about me, I leaned againſt one of the corners of the wall, as I had uſed heretofore, waiting for a fair occaſion to bring my project to paſs, giving thoſe that were there to underſtand, that I was a ſervant to one of thoſe Gentlemen that were at play. Two, were playing at *Zimmer*, at one of thoſe tables, they call'd for lights, there was not any body there but one Page, and he ſo ſleepie and ſo drouſie, that having call'd unto him twice, he did neither anſwer them, nor well mind what they ſaid unto him: I made preſently in to them, and having my candles and candleſticks in a redineſſe, which were not long a lighting, throwing one end of my cloak over my ſhoulder, as if I had been one of the ſervants of the houſe: I ſhifted the candleſticks, putting the lights into thoſe that I had brought with me, clapping thoſe other of ſilver under mine arme: and ſo

turning nimbly away from them, walking as Cats do, softly and without any noyse, I got me quietly to my lodging, where I mixt them together with other peeces of Plate, which I had in the like manner at divers times gathered together; And for to take away all occasion of quarrelling and wrangling, and that I might not be askt; How came you by it? Where did you buy it? What was he that sold it you? To avoyd these cavills; I melted it all into one Masse, and putting it it into a fine earthen pot, *I* carried it to my Captain, that he, out of the authority and credit that he had abroad, might the better sell it for me.

He did so; and taking out a fifth part for himself, he gave me the rest in very good Royals of plate. *It* was an order amongst us, that to him, as to our Chieftain, we should bring all whatsoever we got, whereof the fifth part was his fee, which we truly and justly paid unto him, as a tribute that was as due to him, as that of the *Indies*, is to his *Catholick Majestie*. No Prince in the world had more punctuall payment. And for this tax, tallage, impost, or custome, (or whatsoever in that kind you shall be pleased to call it) we were in all our dangers, protected and defended by him.

We, and this our Commander kept very good quarter, And if at any time, he having need of money, did intreat us that we would lend him some, and put it to account to be paid out of his fifth part, as prizes came in; when we had furnish him, he would presently set it down in his book, with an *Item*, so much due unto such a one, to be paid out of my next Vales, and paid it honestly. No, no, he was none of these shuffling companions, he was wonderfull honest in sharing

the

the ſpoyl with us, levelling all accounts, and ſtill keeping an even reckoning with us. My fellows did not loyter but beſtirred themſelves luſtily.

We were four of us; three adventurers, and one Captain to fight in our defence. We would ſometimes take him along with us, to the end that if any one of us ſhould be taken napping, and the theft found about us, he might ſerve to mitigate the matter, when we were thus taken in the manner, making us to reſtore that which we had taken, giving us two or three boxes on the ear, and as many kicks on the breech, diſmiſſing us from thence in a Devils name, ſaying withall; Get you gone you rogue, bee packing I ſay like an arrant raſcall and falſe thief as thou art, ſirrah, let me ſee your back, and *I* adviſe you let me never heare or ſee that you fall any more a fiſching, leave your ſtealling, and live honeſtly, elſe *I* ſwear unto thee by the faith of an honeſt man, I will cauſe thee to be whipt, or ſend the to the Galleys. Being thus curteſly uſed by him, firſt kickt and beaten, and afterwards roundly rated, they that were preſent, taking him to be a good honeſt Gentleman, and a merciſull minded man, they were content to let us go, and ſo did we ſcape that ſtorm by his means.

But ſome again, were ſo full of rage and choller, that nothing could pacifie their wrath, but our impriſonment, whipping, hanging all was too little for us. To ſuch, our Captain would come, and tell them; Do not foul your hands with ſuch a filthy rogue as this is, give him a hundred kicks, and let him go like a villain and thief as he is, you ſee he is a poor raſcall, and if you commit him to priſon, there will he ſtarve, and be eaten up with lice; and what pleaſure can you take in the de-

ſtruction of ſuch a ragged ſnake, who in himſelf is ſo wretched a ſoul already? And with that, crying out; Thou ungracious unluckie villain, they would give us ſuch jobs, ſuch puſhes, ſuch ſhocks, and juſtlings, and thruſt us with that violence from them, that they would make us to root up the earth with our noſes.

But if any one ſhould be ſo ſtiffe, and ſo hard-laced, that nothing could move him to pittie, nothing work our inlargment, we uſed our beſt endevour to get from them; if that would not ſerve the turn, we would ſtand upon our juſtification, and not ſtick (and that ſtoutly too) to tell this or that other, to his teeth that he lyde in his throat, and that we were as honeſt men as he, or the beſt of them all: and whilſt we were thus ſtriving to be gone, our Captain would interpoſe himſelf under colour of pacifying the matter, and would help to part us, by his comming in between us, and ſo free us from their clutches, and ſet us at liberty. And if need were, (when all this would not ſerve the turn) he did throw a bone amongſt them, and would ſeek ſome occaſion or other, provoking them by words to fall to blows, quieting the leſſer tumult by the greater, and ſo made a ſhift to ſcuffle away.

At other times, when we were running away with that which we had ſtoln, and were hardly followed, even cloſe at the heels of us, one of our fellows would come athwart him that purſued us, and ſtepping out juſt before him, would detain him for a while, asking him what was the matter, and what troubled him, that he made ſuch haſt, who it was that had done him wrong, together with the nature of the injurie, and ſo would not ſuffer him to paſs on, as if he had deſired to make peace, and

to

to pacifie both parties, the leaſt delay made to our great advantage; and they that flie, have alwaies the ſtart of them that follow, and fear, in ſuch caſes, doth evermore clap wings to our feet, they would bee bound for our forth comming. So that by Hook, or by Crook, we went through-ſtitch with our buſineſſe, *maugre* all the world; for we had ſtill one trick or other, when it came to a dead lift, wherewithall to ſerve our turn.

But my ſins had drawn me one day forth of the Citie, to walk abroad and take the ayre, and comming neer unto a river ſide, where in a medow upon the graſſe were layd out a great many linning cloathes a drying, and the woman that lookt unto them, ſitting cloſe, to ſhade her ſelf from the heat of the Sun, in a little hollow cleft of an old wall, that was not farr off; me thought the linnen needed no more drying, and whether it did or no, it was all one to me, wet or dry, either way would ſerve my turn well enough. *I* had a moneths mind to fold up two or three of the fineſt and neweſt ſhirts, that were there; and ſo very eaſily and faitly I took them up. The good woman did not ſee what I did for her back was all this while towards me; but there was not one wanting, who adviſed her thereof.

This poor woman, ſets me out a throat, whoſe ſhrill ſound did aſcend as high as heaven. And leaving a little girle, to look unto the reſt of the linnen, ſhe began to run after me. *I* walked ſoberly and demurely along; letting (as I went along) my ware fall to the ground, going on ſtill as *I* did before, without inlarging of my ſteps thinking with my ſelf, that when this wicked woman had recovered that which ſhe loſt, ſhe would therewith have

been contented, and rested quiet: she but cryde out before, now she made such a noyse, and sent forth such a loud clamour, that the whole field did ring of the peal, which that shrill clapper of hers made, the out-cryes that she made were heard by many; insomuch that great store of all sorts of people came running in especially boys & little children, besides great number of dogs, barking and bawling. Some young lads, which fell in with these lesser beagles, to make me cry the fuller, were ready to swallow me up alive, from whose power it was impossible for me to escape. From that day forward, I began to stand in fear of this little fry, which heretofore I was never afraid of.

A short tale of a Drunkard.

When I heard *Sayavedra* say so, there presently came into my mind a famous drunkard in *Madrid*, who being kickt, and spurn'd, and mightily abused by the boys that had got about him; when he came to the end of the street, he stoops me down and takes up a couple of stones, and holding the one in one hand, and the other in the other, leaning himself against a wall, he said thus unto them: No more, no more (my good boys) it is enough; stay here, stay here (my sweet children for it is not fit you should go any farther.) And therefore (my pretty hearts) let me intreat you to go back, and not trouble me, or your selves any longer: for I am very well satisfied with those courtesies I have already received from you for the which I kindly thank you. Otherwise I have nothing to return you in requitall, but these stones, which I shall freely bestow upon you, though it cost me laying on; so that some of you, I believe, will be better paid for your pains then you expect. Whereupon they seeing him thus resolute, they

sneakt

sneake away one by one, and let the poor man alone, who afterward went quietly along about his businesses. If *Sayavedra* had taken the like course, he might peradventure have had the like successe.

I sent presently to my Captain, advising him how the case stood with me, who as soon as he understood of it, made all the hast he could unto me, was with me ere a man could say *this*; and well instructed me what I should both say and do. That done, he went to the Notarie, telling him that he knew me to be well descended, that I was honourably born both my Father and Mother, and of as ancient a House as any was in *Spain*: and that it was not possible, nor was it to be beleev'd that such a Gentleman as *I* was, would commit so foul a fact.

But say that it should be true; he might either do it out of youthfullnesse or out of want, lacking money, and being loth to begg or borrow, or forced thereunto out of pure hunger; and therefore chose rather to hazard than famish his person. Besides, it is a matter of no moment, a toy, a trifle, a thing not to be made any reckoning of, as well in regard of its small value, as also in respect of the Gentlemans quallitie, and the nobleness of his house. What with these good words and something else that he did besides, within some two hours after I was freed out of Prison: And even as *I* was putting of my foot over the threshold, who should I meet full butt, but Master *Dasario*? who came thither to free a Prisoner.

As soon as he saw me, he presently knew me, and withall pusht me so violently back, that *I* fell flat upon my back to the ground; and then come fircely upon me that he might hold me, while he had

had me at his advantage, and calling to the keeper, committed me anew, and followed the accusation so hard against me, that neither intreaties nor any offers to make him satisfaction for his kirtle, were able to make him surcease his sute. He was a powerfull man, I used all possible diligences: but neither did my pleading that I was a Gentleman, nor the tenderness of my years, prevail so farr, as to bring me fairly off, but they gave me such a heavy sentence that I shall no: forget it while I live. I went for shirts, and they stript me of mine from my shoulder to my waist, banishing me from thence for ever. I had my payment, but the block-head had not his Kirtle.

Well, I was forced to forgo *Naples*, and with it, all my old friends and acquaintance: I pickt up all my trinkets together, and that poor pittance that I had pickt up by mine own industry, and departed from thence, wandring up and down *Italy*, till I came to *Bologna*, where *Alessandro* received me into his service. When we were in *Rome*, and came in unto you, when you were in that thrust and throng of people, we did not so much intend your good, as expect that some farther quarrel would have grown thereupon, whereby we might with the more safety have got some Cloaks or Hats, but missing thus of our purpose, we began to plot how we might commit this theft. We were now come to our journeys end. And so ceasing to talk any farther of it we came into the Inne.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Sayavedra *meets in* Milan *with a friend of his that ſerv'd a Merchant*; Guzman de Alfarache *lays a witty plot how to rob him.*

WHen we were come to *Milan*, we kept vacation for three or four daies, for I durſt not as yet adventure to play. I was loath to have any thing to do with your men of War, for your Souldiers are ſubtile cunning gaimſters, and above all, bear a moſt malicious mind againſt a mans money. They are never quiet, till they have it. Beſides, of them I was ſure to get but little, but might be in election to loſe much. *I* was not minded to do any thing there, ſave only to round the Citie, and afterwards to bid it farewell. Guzman *comes to* Milan.

Standing one day in the midſt of the Market-place, there came to *Sayavedra*, a handſome young youth, honeſtly clad, and well behav'd, and both in his garbe and faſhion, a very fine *Spaniard*. But becauſe his back was towards me, I could not then diſcern more of him, they went a little aſide off from me, where alone by themſelves, they entertained talk a good while: which put me in a great muſe, thinking, what might be the cauſe that theſe two ſhould treat together with that ſecreſie, not having (as I did imagine with my ſelf) ever ſeen one another before. I ſtood ſtill, obſerving their proceedings, that if they ſhould chance to go towards my lodging, I might (take the ſtart of them) be there before them.

When it was almoſt dinner time, this young youth took his leave; all this while I was wonderfull

full jealous, and had a ſtrong ſuſpicion, that they had plotted together to put a trick upon me. And *Sayavedra* not ſaying a word to me, nor I to him, my fear was thereby the more increaſed, and began more and more to doubt what their drift might be. Watching him with no leſs care then a Cat would watch a Mouſe, when I had dined, calling *Sayavedra* unto me, I ſaid thus unto him; that young man, that was with you this morning, me thinks I have (if I be not much miſtaken) ſeen him heretofore in *Rome*. Is not his name *Mendoca*.

Aguilera a famous thief.

No Sir, (ſaid *Sayavedra*) his name is *Aguilera*; nor hath he his name for nought: for he is an Eagle that will fly at any thing, nothing comes amiſs to him, he is ſtill ready upon all occaſions. He is a good fellow, and a fine companion; he is likewiſe a brother of the Company, and ſuch a one, as none of them all can out-ſtrip him, he hath more tricks than a hundred of them, there is more reſort to his Lectures, then to all the Readers beſide, put them all together.

He hath a quick apprehenſion, a nimble wit, a ſtrong brain, a ſound judgment, he is an excellent pen-man, and ſuch an Accomptant, either for the keeping of a Merchants book, or ſumming up of any reckonings whatſoever, that I know not his fellow: We have known one another this many years.

He gave me an account, how he came to this Citie, with a purpoſe to ſeek to live, he had by good hap lighted upon an entertainment; for he had placed himſelf with a Merchant of this Citie, who had received him into his ſervice for the goodneſs of his hand, and hath ſerv'd him now a year, and ſomewhat

what more very faithfully and truly.

He farther told me, that we ſhould lay our heads togeather, and draw one or two good fellows into our company, and joyn together, to knead ſuch a cake, and to make us ſuch a ſwinging paſtie that we might feed our fills, and free our ſelves from this poor and miſerable kind of life, wherein now we live, But I was loath to hearken thereunto, for two reſpects.

Firſt, becauſe I found my ſelf already ſo well fitted to my mind, that I did not deſire to live any better life, then that I did now with you, And ſecondly, for that a great deal of conſideration is to be required, before a man leap out of one courſe of life into another. We gave, and took; he argued, I anſwered: in concluſion, he preſt me hard unto it: but *I* ſtood off; ſo that we did not joyn iſſue, and all that had paſt between us, was to no purpoſe. Many deſigns, many deviſes were told to and fro between us; but I did not like of any one of his propoſitions. For when the concluſion does not handſomely follow, the means thereunto are impertinent, and the ground nought.

This did neither ſecure my ſuſpition, nor work an abſolute unbelief in me. And albeit, the moſt part of that evening, we talk't of other things; this fear, was never out of my head, but whereſoever *I* went, or whatſoever *I* did, I was ſtill thinking upon it, whether I were beſt to believe him, or no; or whether truſting to his honeſty, and depending on the profeſſion of his love unto me, he might play the Iack with me, and go brag when he had done, that he had beaten a Maſter of defence with his own weapon? Did I not deſerve to be laugh at, if I ſhould, ſuffer him to carry away

full jealous, and had a ſtrong ſuſpition, that they had plotted together to put a trick upon me. And *Sayavedra* not ſaying a word to me, nor I to him, my fear was thereby the more increaſed, and began more and more to doubt what their drift might be. Watching him with no leſs care then a Cat would watch a Mouſe, when I had dined, calling *Sayavedra* unto me, I ſaid thus unto him; that young man, that was with you this morning, me thinks I have (if I be not much miſtaken) ſeen him heretofore in *Rome*. Is not his name *Mendoca*.

No Sir, (ſaid *Sayavedra*) his name is *Aguilera*; nor hath he his name for nought: for he is an Eagle that will fly at any thing, nothing comes amiſs to him, he is ſtill ready upon all occaſions. He is a good fellow, and a fine companion; he is likewiſe a brother of the Company, and ſuch a one, as none of them all can out-ſtrip him, he hath more tricks than a hundred of them, there is more reſort to his Lectures, then to all the Readers beſide, put them all together.

Aguilera a famous thief.

He hath a quick apprehenſion, a nimble wit, a ſtrong brain, a ſound judgment, he is an excellent pen-man, and ſuch an Accomptant, either for the keeping of a Merchants book, or ſumming up of any reckonings whatſoever, that I know not his fellow. We have known one another this many years.

He gave me an account, how he came to this Citie, with a purpoſe to ſeek to live, he had by good hap lighted upon an entertainment; for he had placed himſelf with a Merchant of this Citie, who had received him into his ſervice for the goodneſs of his hand, and hath ſerv'd him now a year, and ſome-

what

what more very faithfully and truly.

He farther told me, that we ſhould lay our heads togeather, and draw one or two good fellows into our company, and joyn together, to knead ſuch a cake, and to make us ſuch a ſwinging paſtie that we might feed our fills, and free our ſelves from this poor and miſerable kind of life, wherein now we live, But I was loath to hearken thereunto, for two reſpects.

Firſt, becauſe I found my ſelf already ſo well fitted to my mind, that I did not deſire to live any better life, then that I did now with you, And ſecondly, for that a great deal of conſideration is to be required, before a man leap out of one courſe of life into another. We gave, and took; he argued, I anſwered: in concluſion, he preſt me hard unto it: but *I* ſtood off; ſo that we did not joyn iſſue, and all that had paſt between us, was to no purpoſe. Many deſigns, many deviſes were told to and fro between us; but I did not like of any one of his propoſitions. For when the concluſion does not handſomely follow, the means thereunto are impertinent, and the ground nought.

This did neither ſecure my ſuſpition, nor work an abſolute unbelief in me. And albeit, the moſt part of that evening, we talk't of other things; this fear, was never out of my head, but whereſoever *I* went, or whatſoever *I* did, I was ſtill thinking upon it, whether I were beſt to believe him, or no; or whether truſting to his honeſty, and depending on the profeſſion of his love unto me, he might play the Iack with me, and go brag when he had done, that he had beaten a Maſter of defence with his own weapon? Did I not deſerve to be laugh at, if I ſhould, ſuffer him to carry a-

way

way the bucklers from me in this fashion? But as mine eye was never of from the door so my hand was still upon my distaffe. I was now become another *Argos* in mine own businesse; and another *Ulisses*, to look to his water. plotting with my self, how (if that were true, which he told me) *I* might help them to come off safely and cleanly with this businesse, in case it might be a matter of some moment and consideration, I said unto him; Me thinks (*Sayavedra*) thou robbest thy self of thy mirth, because thou canst not rob others of their money. This Merchants great wealth doth greatly disquiet thee. *Is* that which thou musest upon, *I* know a friend of mine, that would make a third in this business, and a Fellow I tell you, that will not shrink in the wetting, so as it may be a good fat purchase indeed.

What tack, what substance would you have, sayes *Sayavedra*? There is twenty thousand ducats, and a better penny to be had, if we can handsomely light upon it. There is cloth enough (Sir) to cut out, to content us all, if we will our selves. Well (quoth *I*.) But *I* prithee tell me one thing; seeing thou standest thus plodding, is it possible that thou hast not yet setled upon some one invention or other, that may serve the turn?

No in good faith (Sir) not any, replyes *Sayavedra*; I cannot hit upon the right joynt; *I* have now loytred so long, that I am as far to seek, as if I were but newly entred into my A.B.C. Many projects profer themselves unto me, but I pitch upon none, as missing all.

When I heard him say so, I thus made answer. Since it is a busines of that importance as thou saist, what share shall *I* have, if I shall rid you of

of this care, and bring you (like valiant conquerors) bravely off with the victory.

Sir (ſaid *Sayavedra*) my part and my perſon are both at your diſpoſall; but as for *Aguilera*, you were beſt talk with him your ſelf, and when you two are agreed, I make account the buſineſſe is as good as ended.

Said *I* go and ſeek him out, and ſee if you can come to ſpeak with him; wiſh him (when his leaſure will give him leave) that he and I might talk a word together, and it ſhall not be long ere he and I be better acquainted.

He did ſo, ſending a ticket ſecretly unto him; and when we were met, *I* began to wyre-draw him, and to queſtion him ſomewhat more particularly, touching his Maſters diſpoſition, his condition, and quality, what ſtore of wealth he had, in what commodities it did moſt conſiſt, how and where it lay; what moneys he had in preſent caſh, and under what keys? When I had done; he began to make his relation unto me, in this manner, as *I* here deliver unto you.

Sir, *I* aſſure my ſelf *Sayavedra* hath ſufficiently informed you of me; yet my ſelf ſhall give you to underſtand, and I am by my profeſſion a Caulker of ſhips, and a reaſonable good mariner, but as poor, as poor may be. And albeit, that thouſands with a great deal leſs wit, have grown to a great deal of wealth in the world, yet I have ſeen ſome others more able, to have come to the gallows, my ſelf being none of thoſe, that have leaſt deſerved it. It is a year and ſomewhat more that I have ſerv'd a Merchant, and have taken a great deal of pains in his ſervice. And it is about ſome four moneths ſince, that he had made me the keeper

er of his cash, All his books, are in my hands, but his monies, in his own; nor can I resolve with my self, how I may so handsomely rob him, Where much is to be had, a man will hazard much. Here is store of gold to be had, and he is worthy to wear it, that winns it. When, I received *Sayaveda's* ticket, desiring to speak with me, I thought it was no idle errand, that he went about, but that there were something in the wind, what ever it were. For *I* have known him a long time; and that it is not his fashion to put forth to Sea, but when he hath some good peize in chase. And I am verily perswaded, that if this matter be wisely handled, and that we find good firm footing in the passage of this ford, and through our own indiscretion, do not wilfully cast away our selves, we may bring this business bravely about, and make our selves men for ever.

Touching this wealth, I can truly affirm unto you, (as one that knows and hath often seen it) that those commodities, which he hath now in cellerage, and other ware-houses, within his own doors, amount to more then twenty thousand ducats. Wherefore, oftentimes he delivers me the keys, out of the great trust and confidence, that he hath of mine honestie. Besides; he knows those bales are too bigg for me to carry away, on my back. That which he hath cofferred up in two iron chests, in severall sorts of coyn, come to some fifteen thousand ducats, and better. And in his *Escritoria*, that he hath in his shop, some twelve dayes since, did he shut up a delicate dapple gray Cat, as Gentle, and tame as my self, cramb'd full with Crowns, three thousand Crowns, in good dainty brave ruddocks, all good double pistolets, some

some peeces of two, and some of four, not one single one of them all. Not a man in Town hath so bad a name, so ill belov'd, he is counted one of the Caterpillars of the Common-wealth, whatsoever loss should light upon him, not one man that would be sorry for it, but would laugh heartily.

He acquainted me likewise with his name, where he dwelt, in what place, and on which hand the cabinet stood, as also the box, wherein the Cat lay. He made me so good and perfect a relation of every particular, that I could have gone thither blind-fold, and have clapt my hand upon it. I aske him, whether there would be any matter of difficulty in procuring the print of his keys. He told me, that might easily be done; for that he had them all tyde to one little chain, as well those that belong'd to the magazine of his merchandize, as those that serv'd to open his iron chests, which I ordinarily brought unto him. But being a most covetous miserable wretch, his suspition and jealousie was such, that he would be sure that his eye should never be off from them, so loath was he to loose their sight; That then, which we must first of all begin with, must be the getting of the print of the keys in waxe.

Well, this theft being resolved upon, say wee should come to finger this fine pretty puffe, this sweet cat, with a delicate pudding of three thousand crowns in her belly, and so proportionably reckoning alike in the rest, be it more, or lesse, all of us running equally hazard, in all reason, it ought to be, that as the danger was equall, so the gain should be equal. And so we being three of us, every one ought to have a third part.

But

But in case we shall wade drie foot through this ford, every one of us comming off with a good reputation both of his life and fame, in Credit uncracke, so good an Architect, or Surveyor of the work, shall very well deserve some reasonable allowance over and above his fellow-Labourers, onely for his cunning contrivance of the building: And if I enter upon this business, and be the onely Projector to bring it handsomly about, I will have one entire third part wholly to my self, the other two thirds that remain, shall be quietly devided into three parts, whereof you shall have one; *Sayavedra*, another; and my self the third.

This was controverted to and fro, and much adoe there was about it. But we quickly agreed on the matter. Well, *I* had the print of them delivered unto me in wax, and caused the keys to be made out of hand; and *Aguilera* instructed us in the mean while, which were which; to the end that we being throughly informed, which were for the shop, which for the cabinet, we might know the better how to use them. I afterwards told *Aguilera*, that *I* would come the next morning, and speak with his Master, and that he should diligently observe all that I did either say, or do, and that every night we should see one another, and lay our heads together.

On the morrow I went to this Merchants shop, and in the presence of his Servant *Aguilera*, I said unto him: Sir, I am a Gentleman, that am but lately come to this Town, with a purpose to buy some rarities and curiosities, as well for mine own use, as to gratifie my friends: and have for that end brought with me a matter of three thousand Ducats, which are now at my Lodging: *I* have no

no Friends, and Money, you know, is a dangerous Commodity; and an Inne I esteem no secure place for so great a sum. And although they have given me a Key to my Chamber, yet am I afraid lest some inconvenience might happen unto me. I have been informed of your good disposition, and honest dealing with all men, and therefore entreat you to do me the favour to keep them for me some few dayes, till I have bought such things as shall be necessary for my Nuptials, I being shortly to be married.

The Merchant was much pleased with my Proposal, and made large proffers of courtesie to me, desiring me to command either himself or his house, as I had occasion; and that he would carefully secure what Moneys I brought to him, and deliver it as often, and in what manner I should demand it of him. Upon these terms we parted. Coming to my Lodging, I sent *Sayavedra* to acquaint our Partner, that about eight dayes hence he should not fail to come to us, and bring with him his Masters *Barrador*, or Book of Remembrance, wherein he sets down what he is to receive and pay.

Sayavedra at his return found me very pensive: for I was indeed afraid lest *Aguilera* should be too nimble for me, and make himself Master of the prize. But to clear my brains of such imaginations, I called to my servant; who coming, I thus spake unto him, *Sayavedra*, I have a short Tale worth the hearing, which is this: The Ass (that silly Creature) fell sick, and perceiving death ready to cut the thread of his Mortality, was easily perswaded by his Kinsfolks there present,

A short tale of an Ass that made his will.

ſent, to make his Will, each ſtriving for the greateſt Portion; inſomuch that his lawfully Begotten, and his Baſtard Children quarrelled about it: But their well-meaning Father deſirous to depart in peace, (for quietneſs ſake) divided his goods after this manner:

The Aſſes Legacy.

My Will is, That my Tongue, when I am dead, be beſtowed amongſt ſuch my Children as are flatterers and back-ſliders; To the Cholerick, I bequeath my Tail for a cooler; My Eyes to the Laſcivious; My Brains to Alchymiſts; My Heart to the Covetous; My Ears to the Seditious; My Snout, to Epicures and Drunkards; My Bones to the Sloathful; My Loyns to the Proud; My Chain to the Obſtinate; My Hinder-legs to the Lawyers; My Fore-feet to the Judges; My Head to Scriveners: And laſtly, I bequeath my Fleſh to the Poor, and my Skin to my Baſtard Children.

I would not that *Aguilera*, bearing us in hand, ſhould at laſt force us to cover our ſelves with the Skin of this Teſtator: which if he ſhould do, I aſſure you I could not but eſteem him a ſubtile fellow.

Sayavedra, to free me from ſuſpition, anſwered, I might be ſatisfied with that laudable Cuſtome which is amongſt all *Picaro*'s, Never to be falſe one with another: and, That in a thouſand years I ſhould not be deceived of one mite.

True dealing amongſt Thieves.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Guzman's *success in Robbing the Merchant of* Milaine; *they divide the Moneys, and go to* Genoa.

MAny various thoughts did in this short time distract these stipendary Pensioners; for I had not given them any account of my design, but onely sweetned their lips, and left them, *Con la miel en la boca: with a taste of honey in their mouthes*; longing to see the issue of the business, yet could they not devise in what manner it was to be carried.

Aguilera at the prefixed time brought me his Shop-book. I turned to one of the leaves towards the latter end, where I found some Memorials entred eight days before, and in a void place or blank where nothing was written, I set down in the same Character; Left with me by *Don Juan Ossorio*, Three thousand Crowns in Gold, some being pieces of ten, but most of two and four. At the same time he left with me Two thousand Royals of Plate.

This done, I drew a Line upon what I had writ, to shew that the book was croſt: and wrote in a different letter in the Margent, *Llevolos, Llevolos*, i.e. *All this is mine.*

I returned him the Book, together with ten *Doblones* of ten, bidding him, when he opened the Cabinet, to take one hundred Crowns out of the Bag, and put in the *Doblones*. I likewise gave him two Billets; the one said, These three

thouſand Crowns belong to *Don Juan Oſſorio*; and in the other was written, Here are two thouſand Royals in plate, whoſe true owner is *Don Juan Oſſorio*; adviſing him, That if there were any other Bill or Note in the Bag, to take it out, and leave mine onely there. And that of the two thouſand Royals he ſhould put into another great Bag; wherein *Aguilera* told me, There was about ſeventeen thouſand more: and to remember that this great Bag of Silver lay in a Cheſt next unto his Cabinet, marked with a ſpot of ink at the mouth of it.

With theſe inſtructions, he put every thing in its right place, according to my directions.

The day following, after Dinner, I walked to the Merchants Shop, with my Man at my heels. He rejoyced to ſee me, thinking I had brought that which I intended to demand of him: To morrow, Sir, (ſaid I) I ſhall ſend my ſervant with a Bag, and a Ticket in it, deſiring you to give him a quick diſpatch, becauſe I ſhall have occaſion to uſe his ſervice. The Merchant thinking I meant to have the Money brought him the next morning, he ſaid unto me, Sir, your deſire ſhall be fulfilled, you ſhall have it when you pleaſe.

I went out of doors, and had ſcarce gone twenty paces, but I returned again, and ſaid to him, Sir, ſince I went from hence, I have thought upon a buſineſs, for which I have preſent occaſion for the uſe of this Money; and therefore (I pray) let me have it. The Merchant ſomewhat troubled, ſaid, What Money, Sir, is that you would have of me? All, Sir, ſaid I; for I muſt preſently uſe it. What All? replied he. All the Gold and Silver, ſaid I. He anſwered,

What

What Gold and Silver? I told him, All the Gold and Silver, Sir, which you have of mine. I have no Gold or Silver of yours, ſaid he; nor do I know what you mean. Sir, anſwered I, (roughly) why do you make it ſo ſtrange? this trick will not ſerve your turn. Sir, ſaid he, I think you are mad, to demand that of me which you never gave me. I replied, Sir, take heed what you ſay, and leave off jeſting; for I have preſent uſe for my Money. Money? ſaid he, What Money do you demand of me? My demand is, thoſe Crowns and Royals I left with you the other day. He anſwered, Go look your Crowns and Royals elſewhere; the Devil a croſs have I of yours. Are you not aſhamed, ſaid I, to affirm this before theſe Gentlemen here preſent, who are my Witneſſes, that when I told you I would ſend my Man to morrow for them, you anſwered me, He ſhould have them? and now I come my ſelf, having preſent occaſion for my Money, you deny it. Well may I deny that I never had, ſaid he. Sir, did not I about eight dayes ſince bring you theſe Moneys, delivering them unto your ſelf? ſaid I: Give me therefore my Moneys preſently, you ſhall not keep them one minute longer in your hands. Sir, anſwered he, I have not ſo much as one Farthing of yours in my hand.

My enflamed choler having ſet my face on fire, I ſaid, What meaneſt thou by this? I will conſtrain thee to produce my Money: be wiſe therefore in time, and take heed of after-claps. I confeſs, (replied he) that you promiſed to leave ſo much Money with me; but never brought it: nor did I either ſee or touch, in all

my life, one *Maravede* of your Money; and therefore if you pleaſe, complain to the Juſtice.

When I ſaw he had armed himſelf with this reſolution, I ſeemed to foam at the mouth for anger, ſaying, Falſe man, art thou ſo wicked thus to rob me of my Money before my face? I adviſe thee to diſpatch, and deliver me my three thouſand Crowns, otherwiſe I will tear them out of thy throat.

Many that paſt along the ſtreet, entred the Shop, enquiring of the Neighbours the occaſion of our quarrel: amongſt the reſt, comes in a *Bargello*, an Officer of the ſame nature with our *Alquazil* in *Caſtile*, a kinde of Sergeant or Catchpole; but he had no Vare or white Rod in his hand.

When I ſaw the Juſtice preſent, I ſuppoſed my ſute almoſt at an end; I began in a milder temper to ſpeak unto the beholders: Gentlemen, you have heard how this covetous Uſurer hath denied me my own Money; let his own Servant ſpeak the truth concerning this buſineſs: and if he, out of reſpect to his Maſter, ſhall refuſe to deliver what he knows, let his Book be produced, wherein will appear in what parcels I delivered the Money to him, that all the world may judge in which of us there is moſt truth or honeſty. Into a Cat-skin bag that he hath, he put into that *Eſcritorio* three thouſand Crowns of mine, ſome of two, but moſt of four: and for confirmation of this, you ſhall finde amongſt them ten Crowns of ten, which make juſt the ſum of three thouſand Crowns: and, in a Bag which he hath lock'd up in that iron Cheſt, he hath put two thouſand Royals of mine; ſaying,

That

That there was at that time in the ſame Cheſt about ſeventeen thouſand Royals of his own: and if here in your preſence I do not make good what I have ſaid, I will be content to loſe it all: onely, Gentlemen, do me the favour (though a ſtranger) to make preſent ſearch, that he may not have opportunity to tranſport or remove them to any other place.

The Merchant then ſaid, I am willing to put my ſelf upon this Tryal: you ſhall peruſe my books, and ſee all the money in the houſe. He commanded his Caſh-keeper to bring his great book of Accompts. This I excepted againſt, ſaying, Perfidious man, why doſt thou ſeek to deceive me with your books? I would ſee that wherein you ſet down thoſe particular ſums of Money you received of me, which is a long and narrow book. Sir, ſaid *Aguilera*, perhaps this Gentlemen means that in which you write your Memorials; for to my knowledge there is not in all the houſe, any other of this faſhion. This he brought before us, and ſaid, (certainly, Sir) This is the book you would have. I ſaid, This is the Manual that will decide our controverſie, and will make his knavery plainly appear.

They began to turn over the leaves; and when I ſaw my own hand, I ſaid, Pray Gentlemen be pleaſed to look upon this writing, and reade theſe parcels of Money which he hath croſt and blotted out; the ſums are viſible enough, though he hath noted it in the margent to be paid; but this trick ſhall not avail him, I will have my Money before I will depart.

They did all look upon it, and easily discern the parcels before mentioned.

Whereat the Merchant was mad, swearing a thousand Oathes, that he knew not how it came there, nor who writ it.

The Neighbors that were present, did undoubtedly believe the truth of my Relation; telling me, The crossing of his book was not material, nor his writing in the Margent, that he returned me my Moneys.

You have heard, said I, his protestation, that he received not one peny of mine, and yet you see it here set down; his purpose being, I know, to play the Rogue with me, as is evident by his cancelling the book: if he received it, why doth he deny it? if otherwise, how cometh it here? I beseech you cause that Cabinet to be opened, where I doubt not, but you may finde my *Doblones*, and amongst them, ten of ten Crowns a-piece.

The Merchant refused to open the Cabinet, vowing with fearful obsecrations, That all was villany and lyes; and that he had not in all the house one *Doblone* of ten.

The *Bargello* protested, That if he would not deliver the Keyes, he would give particular notice of all the business to the *Signor Capitan di Giustitia*, who is there in equal authority with a *Corrigidor* in *Castile*.

At last, with great perswasion, the Keyes were delivered, the Cabinet opened; and going to tell the Money, the Billet was discovered, expressing *Don Juan Osorio* to be their true owner, and the sum found with the ten *Doblones*, three thousand Crowns.

The

The Merchant ſwore this was *Opus Dæmonii*, that the Devil had put thoſe *Doblones* there, and not he; and deſired them to ſecure me, becauſe I had a Familiar.

I entreat you, ſaid I, to open the Cheſt; for there lies my Silver, I ſaw him put it therein. There were many Bags of greater and leſſer ſums; but when I ſaw that with the black ſpot, I cried out, This is mine: and the truth was confirmed, by finding the other Billet or Note, which ſpecified my two thouſand Royals to be there. I was now louder then before, ſaying, Thou common Cheater, and Enemy to God; I do not wonder if thou be rich, if thou deceiveſt others as thou haſt done me. I committed my Moneys to thy cuſtody, preſuming I ſhould have them upon demand; but now I believe he that adviſed me to thee, was as very a ſherk as thy ſelf.

All that were preſent, were much amazed, and incenſed againſt the Merchant for his falſe and roguiſh dealing; being now throughly ſatisfied that I had a great deal of Reaſon and Juſtice on my ſide. This puniſhment ſtill attends them that live wickedly, That ſlight proofs are ſuffient to overthrow them.

His own Servant ſwore, That I in his hearing deſired his Maſter to keep for me three thouſand Crowns, and two thouſand Royals; but knew not whether I delivered them or not: this he referred to his Maſters Books, which did not always lie in the ſhop, but were carried into the Ware-houſe. Aguilera *ſworn.*

My Servant on the other ſide ſwore, That with his own hands he told out the Moneys to the Merchant, in preſence of divers others, that were Sayavedra *ſworn.*

unknown

unknown to him, becauſe he was a ſtranger in that place.

Theſe evidences were credited; and now they would not ſuffer him to ſpeak one word in his own defence; nor had he any ſpirit to talk longer: for being in yeers, and ſeeing ſo ſtrange and unexpected an accident, he ſeemed almoſt dead, and continued in a ſwound a good ſpace. I comforted my ſelf with this, That if he ſhould die, I ſhould have leſs want of him, then of his Money.

I was very deſirous that the end of this buſineſs might be anſwerable to its good beginning: and therefore when with one unanimous conſent they cried out, The Money is his, Give the Gentleman his Money; I anſwered, I will not receive it, let it be depoſited. The *Bargello*, to end the controverſie, took the Money into his own Cuſtody; which, with a little Suit, was within a few dayes delivered to me.

My Merchant was not onely cheated of his Caſh, but condemned in Coſts and Charges of Court, beſides the infamy and reproach fell upon him by this means.

When I ſaw ſo much Money in theſe poor and ſinful hands of mine, I could not forber laughing at this project which was hatched in my own brain. I was now grown rich, *Sayavedra* relieved, and *Aguilera* had patch'd up his broken Eſtate.

About two dayes after, he came to us very privately for his ſhare of the Moneys; which I faithfully delivered to him: he told us, His Maſter was ready to die with grief, and confidently believed the Devil had thus unjuſtly taken his Moneys from him.

I proffered to *Sayavedra* his part, both of this and the former five hundred Crowns. He ſaid, He knew it ſecure enough, and deſired that his ſhare might ſtill remain in my hands, till he had ſome opportunity to diſpoſe of them.

Let me not omit one paſſage which chanced when my Evidences were examined. A Country Coxcomb being brought to witneſs in his Landlords behalf; and inſtructed, that when he ſhould be ask'd how old he was, he ſhould anſwer, Eighty: The ſilly Clown, having a dull underſtanding, but deſirous to pleaſure his Landlord; when demanded touching his age, took his Oath, That he was Eight hundred years old. And although the Notary, wondring at his raſh Oath, adviſed him to be careful: He clowniſhly anſwer'd, Do thou be careful how thou writeſt, ſtand not a ſifting other mens lives, but let every man be as old as he will himſelf. The Court then riſing, he was cauſed to appear a ſecond time; who ſtill affirmed, he was Eight hundred years old: which the Judge conſidering, demanded of him, Why he had ſo ſworn? Becauſe, quoth he, (and it like your Lordſhip) it was for the honour of God, and the *Coude*, my Maſter. *A tale of a Country fellow.*

We continued in *Millaine* ſome ten or twelve dayes, not altogether free from fear, leſt our ſubtilty ſhould be diſcovered. Wherefore we did agree to depart from thence to *Genoa*.

In this City I bought one of the faireſt counterfeit Gold-Chains that ever I ſaw, and procured a Gold-Smith to make another of good Gold, ſo exactly like the other, that it could not *Guzman buys a Gold chain.*

not be discerned, but by the weight and tincture; for that of Gold was more ponderous, and gave the greater sound. This cost me six hundred and thirty Crowns; I wish I had given a thousand, being certain to make the false Chaine yield me as much. With them, I bought likewise two curious little Boxes of one fashion, and put each Chain in its several Box, not doubting but my project would conduce greatly to my profit.

I told *Sayavedra* in part, how my worshipful Uncle entertained me; and, that being but a childe, some of my friends had put a Jest upon me, either because my out-side was not very good; or, that I was not full of Money, that they might gain by me; but now I shall see them in better equipage: and because every *Spaniard* (though the son of a Cobler) adorns himself with the name of *Don*, that he may be esteemed a Gentleman, I will henceforth call my self *Don Juan de Guzman*.

(a) *A Garment much like our Clergy-mens Cassocks here.* Dizesi Sotana porq; se trae soto el mantero

And having furnish'd my self with as much Silk-Grograin, as would make me a Cloke, and a (a) *Sotana*, and all things necessary, we began our Journey for *Genoa*.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Guzman *arrives at* Genoa, *and is nobly entertained by his Kindred.*

WHen I came to *Genoa*, I called to minde my former entertainment there, and how I was freed from thence, carrying my Cross upon my shoulders: Whereas now my Friends spread their Clokes upon the ground to receive me. I apparelled my self *A lo Romano*; I attracted the eyes of all men to me, as well because I was a stranger, as likewise that I wore a very brave Sute and *Sotana*, and had a presence not to be despised.

They enquired of my Servant who I was. He told them, *Don Juan de Guzman*, a Gentleman of *Sevilla*, Son to a wealthy Lady, whose Husband was a *Signor* of *Genoa*; and, that I intended to recreate my self here, till I received certain Letters and Dispatches; and then to return to *Rome*.

The Inne where I lay, was the best in all the Town, and is called, *L' Hosteria di Santi Maria*; whither most of the Nobility and Gentry did resort. Here we were upon great expences, without endeavoring to do our selves any good at all in point of profit. I played sometimes, but more for Company sake, and to pass away the time, then for Money. *Sayavedra* had now no hand in the business; nor did I set his plough on work, save in deep and fat grounds, where there

there was hopes of a plentiful harveſt. His attendance was chiefly at a great Feaſt, and a full board.

Guzmans *bounty.* Having one day won about a hundred Crowns, a Captain that had command of a Galley ſate by me, who I perceived to approve very well of my play, and was glad that I had got the money: and I reading in his looks that he had no ſtore of Crowns in his Purſe, but rather in extream want and neceſſity, I gave him ſix *Doblones* of two; which at that conjuncture, conſidering his poverty, ſeemed to him to be ſix thouſand. There is a time when one ſingle Royal is of more eſteem with a man, then one thouſand. The Captain made me a very thankful acknowledgement of this favour. I likewiſe diſtributed ſome few Crowns amongſt the reſt of the Spectators, to make them the better affected towards me.

I had already a deſign upon this Captain, and therefore made him my Friend. *Quien bien* *A Proverb.* *ſiembra, bien coge: He that ſows well, reaps well.* He was called *Favello:* not that this was his proper name, but becauſe it was given him by a Miſtriſs of extraordinary beauty, whom he ſometimes ſerved.

We were continually together, and entred into a moſt perfect friendſhip, which was encreaſed daily by our mutual affections. He feaſted me often on board his Galley, making the ſlaves row along the ſhore, for our greater pleaſure. We did communicate many particular accidents and ſecrets each to other; but I never ſuffered him to come within my ſhirt, nor pierce into my boſome; *Sayavedra* onely kept the Key of that Cabinet,

Cabinet, and none but he knew the secrets of my Soul.

This *Favello* was of a good behaviour, discreet, patient, yet full of metal; qualities well befitting so valiant a Captain, and so amorous a Souldier: by means whereof, he lived alwayes in want: and it is the common misfortune that accompanies men thus qualified, to be alwayes in poverty. I used my best means to free him from those his extremities, and carried my self with so much subtilty with him, and all my other acquaintance, that within a few dayes I might have received any courtesie in that City.

Few men are ashamed to own such as are rich for their Kindred; but most flie from the vertuous, if they stink of poverty. Those that before threw stones at me, as if I had been some strange Cur, whom they would chase out of doors, did now quarrel who should feast me first at his house, and give me the noblest entertainment; offering their service to me in such complemental manner, as my outward bravery deceived.

That I might without the least suspicion come to the knowledge of him whom I had cause to remember, I asked them how many Brothers my Father had. They told me, There were three of them: the second Brother was dead; but the eldest was living in the City, a Batchelor, and a man of great Revenues: by the description was made of him, I found my self not at all deceived; for I alwayes believed he was my Uncle that dealt so unhandsomely with me. I dissembled my intentions, and told them, I would go the next day, and kiss his hands. But in the

the interim, he hearing of me (although he were very lame and decrepid) came leaning on his ſtaff to viſit me, conducted with the beſt of our Family. I was glad to ſee him; but ſorry that he was ſo old: I could have wiſht him much younger, that he might have felt the ſmart of thoſe jerks I was reſolved to beſtow upon him.

My Uncle asked me if I had not formerly been in *Genoa*. I told him, About three years ſince I paſſed that way; but could not ſtay longer then one night, becauſe I was going in great haſte to *Rome*, upon pretence of a certain Benefice.

This ſtory is at large in the firſt Part.

My Uncle ſuppoſing this following ſtory would pleaſe me, ſaid, About ſeven years ſince (my good Couſin) there came hither a little roguiſh boy, whom all that ſaw, ſuſpected to be a Thief, or at leaſt a young diſciple of theirs; and, that he might the more eaſily rob me, came to my Houſe, giving me ſome particular ſignes and tokens of my Brother that is now in glory, as alſo of your Mother, telling me that he was his Son and my Nephew: he look'd ſo like a Rogue, that we would not own him for our Kindred, leſt his infamy might reflect upon our family, and turn to our diſgrace. We reſolved to make him leave the City; which we did, by a pretty plot we deviſed for him: and I can aſſure you (Couſin) that he went flying from hence, like a Dog that hath a bladder with ſome few ratling pebles tied to his tail. All that had formerly paſt, he related to me very ſolemnly, omitting no circumſtances; as the contriving the buſineſs, his making him go ſupperleſs to bed (ſuppoſing to

have

have saved his sheets) and, which was worst of all, his tossing him in a blanket.

I was this little Rogue that suffered all this; apprehending the abuse so feelingly, that my anger brake forth afresh, like the wound of a murthered man bleeding in presence of his murtherer.

Sir, said I, we are indebted to this Youth, if he be yet living, after those *Lavalto's* and Capers in the Air you mentioned, that above all the Noble Houses in *Genoa*, he made choice of ours to honour him; and, if such another should come to me, I would deal courteously with him, till I had informed my self of the truth; nor should he be the worse entreated, for preferring our Name before any other.

About the same time I was with my Mother in *Seville*, and it is not as yet three years since I left her.

My Father left me a competent Revenue. I cannot boast my self to be rich, nor justly complain, that I am poor; besides, my Mother was always a provident woman, well-governed, and a small waster.

My Friends with gladness heard my Relation, and were my daily Idolaters; using me with great courtesie, and good entertainment.

I bought at an (*a*) *Almoneda* a fair Cup-board of Plate, which cost me almost eight hundred Ducats, and invited all my Kindred, with some other of my Friends, one day to dinner; feasted them with a rich Banquet,

(*a*) *A publick Outcry or open sale of Goods.*

When the Table was taken away, we went to Cards, where I got almost fourscore Crowns, most of which I bestowed in *Barato* to the standers by: but it had been much better for

them, that I had been poor *Guzman de Alfarache* in his Rags, then *Don Juan de Guzman* in all his gallantry.

CHAP. VIII.

Guzman *rob his Uncle and Kinſmen in* Genoa, *and imbarks himſelf in certain Galleys bound for* Spain.

I Had now as free acceſs into all parts of the City, as if I had been a Town-born-childe. Going one day to meet ſome of my new acquaintance, it was my chance to eſpy a Fool, which went up and down *Alcala de Henares*: This Fool, a Dog had bit by the Leg; which hurt was healed, but not forgotten: For finding him afterwards ſleeping in the Sun, he took up a great ſtone (as much as he could lift) near the Church of *Santa Maria*, and ſtole to the Dog without being perceived; which ſtone, lifting it up as high as he could, he let it fall directly on his head. The poor Cur being almoſt caſt into a deader ſleep, fell pitifully abounding in the air; which *Puctillos* the Fool ſeeing, he ſaid unto him, *Quien enemigos tiene, no duerma: He does ill that ſleeps, that has an enemy.*

A Tale of Fuctillos *the Fool.*

Proverb.

A ſtory of a Miracle wrought in San Miniato, *and upon what occaſion.*

Far different is this ſtory, of which my ſelf was an Eye-witneſs.

A Gentleman of *Florence*, called Captain *Giovanni Gualberto*, a Knights Son, a *Titulado*, going to *Florence* well armed on Horſeback, he met with

with his mortal enemy, who killed his Brother: His enemy seeing the danger wherein he was (for he could not escape him) humbled himself at his feet, and with his arms across his breast, besought him for Iesus Christs sake, that was crucified, to spare his like. *Giovanno Gualberto*, pricked with a charitable compunction, willingly pardoned him. And returning back to *Florence*, they entred *San Miniato's* Church, to offer God thanks: And kneeling before a lively Crucifix, *Giovanni* desired of God, so to forgive him, as he had forgiven his enemy; which words were no sooner uttered, but Christ bowed his head unto him. Whereupon *Giovanni* entred into a Religious Order, where he continued to his death. This Image of Christ stands with the head bowed unto this day, and is there reverenced as a great Relique, by the *Florentines* and other Catholicks.

I played with them at their publick Ordinaries and Gaming-houses; they likewise meeting at my Lodging. One night I was so fortunate to carry home with me at one clap above seven thousand Royals, still continuing *Barato* to Captain *Favello*, whom I perceived of late to be very pensive and sad. I asked him the reason of it: He told me, His sorrow was, because about ten dayes hence the Galleys had expres's order to depart.

Proverb. *Yo estava fuera de cuenta: o, en las nueve meses.*

Sir, said I, there is by your Voyage offered a fair opportunity to effect what I long since intended; and without your assistance, I utterly despair of my purpose. I came hither onely to disoblige my self, and revenge a certain injury which my Father, being an ancient man, received from

a young Spaniard resident in this City: and because it may so happen, that after I have satisfied my desire, his Friends may either by their great power and influence, or by the strength of their purses, seek to detain me; I entreat you to suffer me with secrecy to board your Galley: which favour shall binde me perpetually to you.

Favello was very attentive to my discourse, and begged me to remit the business to him, or at least that he might be a party in this revenge. I excused my self to him; adding, that it was neither just nor fitting, that the injury being mine, the revenge should be anothers; and that he did me much wrong, to doubt that I wanted either courage or strength to execute my intension.

When he heard my resolution, he grew more quiet and calm; promising, that if I was once in his Galley, all *Italy* should not be able to do me any damage, and that he would inform me of the very day they were to set sail. He advised me to convey by *Sayavedra* my Trunks and Clothes on board the Galley, that I might be ready at an hours warning to embark my self.

Guzmans *plot to cheat his kinsman.*

I expressed great thankfulness to *Favello*; and returned to *Sayavedra*, whom I ordered to buy four Trunks, two of which (said I) you shall place in that part of the Galley where the Captain shal appoint, the other two are to be conveyed into my Lodging, with the greatest secrecy that may be, filling them up with stones, wrapped up in some old rags, that they may not rattle in the carriage; and be careful you make them not heavier then is requisite, but let them weigh about six *Arrobas*, which is one hundred and a half.

When

When these wheels were thus set going, I went to *Don Beltran's* house, that good old man my Uncle. And after some other discourse, I told him how fearful I was to be long abroad in the Night, because of the Trunks I had at my Lodging; and of two of them especially, that were full of Plate, Jewels, and good store of Crowns, and indeed all the little wealth I had.

This is your own fault, Cousin, said he; for my House might very well have excused your Lodging: there I confess where you are, is the best Inne in all the Town; yet have I had experience of this truth, That to all the Chamber-doors in an Inne, your Host, his Wife, Children, or Servants, have two or three Keyes; and if you commence suit against any of them, after great trouble and cost, your Host will alledge, That you carried (what you have lost) out your self, or that you brought no such thing thither; and, that he knew not of it, because you did not at your first coming in, consign and commit it to his charge: if you will continue there still, I advise you to bring to my House your Trunks, and here in my *Escritorio* they shall be secured for you. He thought I spoke ingenuously, because he had seen my Vessels of Silver, my Chain, and Gold.

Proverb. En la posada no ay cosa posada.

In the midst of our discourse comes *Sayavedra*, pretending a long Message to me. I watching my opportunity, said aloud, You should have told him that I am now at *Sevil* or *Rome*; go carry him the great Chain, and signifie unto him, I have done my utmost. Sir, said he, in the same Key, I must hire a Porter, for I am not able to bear this great Chain, that weighs in good Gold

seven hundred Crowns. Dispatch, said I, to some Gold-Smiths shop with it, and make choice of some Jewels that may serve for the present occasion; and leave the Chain there, or some pawn, that is of more value then what thou receivest of him, paying him interest for the loan of it: so shalt thou dis-ingage thy self of the folly into which thou hast brought me; nor do I know any other remedy, but this.

My Uncle hearing what passed, said, What pawns are you to give, Cousin? I replied, Sir, he that hath fooliſh Servants, must often fall into great inconveniences. There is here a Gentlewoman of *Castile*, that is to be married to a Gentleman of our own Country. They are both my intimate acquaintance. These have requested me to furnish them with Apparel and Jewels for their Wedding, which is now so sudden, that I cannot give them the satisfaction that I would; and this block-head my Man had not the wit to excuse me; for I am jealous that he invited them to it without my knowledge.

The old Man seeing me so much moved at my Servants indiscretion, said to me, Cousin, let not this trouble you; you are now in a place where you cannot want Friends for such a small matter as this.

I know very well, said I, that my noble Kinsmen will assist me what they may: but amongst them all, I do not know any that are married, that can furnish me with such things as are requisite for the solemnity; nor dare I intreat them in a matter so troublesome.

Cousin, replied he, disquiet not your self: for I doubt not but from my self and other of your Friends,

Friends, to accommodate her ſo well, that you ſhall have credit by it; and, for your Trunks, ſend them in when you pleaſe.

I kiſs'd his hands for this double favour: and coming to my Lodging, ſent away my Trunks, each of them having three Keyes, ſurely lock'd, and ſtrongly plated with iron.

My Uncle, when he ſaw *Sayavedra* enter the Houſe, with the Porters ſo heavy loaded, that they were ſcarce able to creep along, asked my Servant what thoſe Trunks contained, that made them ſo weighty?

He anſwered, Sir, though my Maſter hath in them many things of great worth, yet that which is of greateſt value, is a parcel of Stones which he gathered together from all parts of *Italy*, the choiceſt he could procure whereſoever he came: but whither he intends to carry them, I know not.

The old Man glad of this Relation, placed them with his own hands in ſafe cuſtody: and *Sayavedra* returned to me, to conſult how we ſhould deal with another rich Kinſman I had; that whileſt others complained of the harm I had done them, he might not laugh and applaud his wit, that he had eſcaped my fingers.

Another Plot of Guzmans.

In the morning *Sayavedra* taking with him the two Chains in thoſe two Boxes that were ſo alike, attended me to his Houſe, where I found him newly riſen. He asked me the reaſon of my early viſit. Sir, ſaid I, I come to wiſh you better ſucceſs to day, then I had laſt night. I intreat you to let one of your ſervants accompany mine to ſome honeſt Gold-Smith, that may valne a Chain I have here. *Sayavedra* preſently de-

livered me the little Box, wherein was that made of pure Gold. This I shewed to my Kinsman, who was much pleased with it; professing he had never seen a fairer. After he had taken a full view of it, I returned it to my Man, who with *Steffanello* my Cousins faithful Servant, went to dispatch this business: and whilest we were discoursing together, they came with a little Scroll of paper, wherein the Gold-Smith had set down, that the Chain of Gold was in fineness twenty two Caruts; and that according to its weight, it was worth six hundred fifty and three Spanish Crowns. I bid *Sayavedra* produce it again; who gave me the counterfeit one. My Cousin began to commend the curious workmanship of it: and putting it up into the Box, I said, Sir, about two Nights since, I was bitten at play by some Gentlemen of this City; but they themselves worse. I have gotten of them five thousand Royals. They have challenged me to play for a greater sum, and I am very willing to follow my good fortune while it lasts; and because all Gamesters may as well lose as win, I am unwilling to finde my self limited if they should be victorious, but rather come upon them with fresh supplies, to recover what I have lost; and perhaps gain of them. I confess I want no Money, having in my Uncle's House five thousand Crowns; yet I must not expend upon that stock: for as soon as certain Letters, which I expect from *Sevil*, come to my hands, I may not prolong their payment, nor my departure to *Rome*, one hour, for the setling of a good imployment either upon my self or a Cousin-German of mine, as it shall best please my Uncle, to whose di-

direction I ſhall alwayes ſubmit my ſelf. You have viewed this Chain, and are aſſured by the Gold-Smith of its full worth. I therefore entreat you (with all ſecrecy; for I would not willingly be accounted a Prodigal) to furniſh me with ſix hundred Crowns upon this Chain, paying intereſt for that ſhort time I ſhall uſe them; and for this cauſe I leave it with you, that whether I win or loſe, you may ſatisfie your ſelf out of the Chain.

He ſeemed to be ſomewhat diſpleaſed with me, that for ſo ſmall a courteſie I ſhould proffer him a pawn: but I clapping on ſuddenly the cover of the Box, conſigned it to him, forcing it into his hand; proteſting, that if he did not accept of the Chain, I would by no means receive this kindneſs of him. When he heard my reſolution, he was contented, promiſing to procure money; which he faithfully performed: for as I was ſitting at dinner, *Steffanello* came in with the ſix hundred Crowns; I rewarded him for his pains, and deſired him to preſent my ſervice to his Maſter. He was no ſooner departed, but my Couſin came: whoſe ſudden approach did much trouble me; for I believed, that opening the box he had found the Chain to be falſe; and made that haſte, to prevent his Servants paying me the Money. But this doubt was ſoon reſolved, for he came towards me with a cheerful countenance, making many offers to me of his love and ſervice.

Whileſt we were talking, the Gentlemen-Gameſters enter the Room, calling to *Sayavedra* for the Cards. There was a well-ordered battel began betwixt us. My Kinſman perceiving

we

we meant to fight it out, and to sit close to it, took his leave.

Being near my departure, I used *Sayavedra's* assistance; and sallying safely upon them, I routed them, put them to flight, leaving behind them, as a prey for me, about fifteen thousand Royals in Gold.

I gave *Barato* to those that were present, and into the Captains hand I clap'd fifty Crowns; knowing, that I purchased a Servant, without whose help all I had done was worth nothing.

The Quarrel being ended, my Captain advised me that on Sunday night following the Galleys were to depart. Whereupon, seeing my self straitned in time, I sent abroad my Tickets, acquainting my Friends, that the Wedding was to be solemnized on Munday next; and desired, that I might be obliged to them for their promised favour. The Ants do not return so laden to Granaries with Corn in *August*, as they came tumbling into my Lodging with Jewels, every one striving who should send me the most and the best; which indeed were so many, and so rich, that I was almost ashamed to receive them: but I recollected my self, considering they were not dear.

Guzman *prepares to be gone.*

My Uncle sent me in a Collar to grace the Brides Shoulders, and a Girdle suitable to it; a Feather to adorn her head-dressing, all of pure Gold, and set thick with Pearls and Stones; the three pieces valued at above three thousand Crowns.

The rest furnish'd me with Buttons, Bracelets, Ear-rings, Tablets, Carcanets, Veils, Coyfs, and Rings,

Rings, all very curious, rich, and of great value. These, as they came in, unknown to the Captain, I disposed into my Trunks. And the next three dayes I visited my Kindred, giving them thanks for the undeserved kindeness they had done me.

Upon Sunday I called up my Host, to whom I said, I shall be abroad at a Friends house this Night at play, where some Gentlemen have appointed to meet: and because it may be late before we have done, I intend both to sup and lie there: therefore (good mine Host) be careful of my Chamber, though I send *Sayavedra* home unto you. And so being favored by the darkness of the night, I went out of the Inne, leaving my Landlord two Trunks (full of fine pebbles, which I caused to be brought from the Sea-side, being something like our craggy Chrystal of the Mountain) to pay for my diet and lodging during the time I staid in *Genoa*.

Guzman cheats his Kinsmen, and departs from Genoa.

I went on board the Galley, where I was nobly entertained by Captain *Favello*. And although I prospered in my design as well as possibly I could have wish'd; yet did my Conscience check me, for my unworthy dealing with my Kinsmen: This did much trouble me for a little while; but it was quickly past.

I considered what haste mine Host and the rest would make to break open my Trunks, when they saw me not returned the first nor second Nights; each one alledging the priority of his Debt; each man pretending himself the first Creditor; that so, by the ordinary course

course of Law in those parts, he might be first satisfied.

Me-thought I did likewise see how my Host did hug himself, and laugh to see how rich I had left him: for my two Trunks, if valued according to their weight, might very well have contented him: but the worth did not answer their weight, there being in them nothing but stones; which, if he would have hang'd himself, might serve to build his Sepulchre. My old Uncle I think was well provided for, with those precious stones *Sayavedra* told he had of mine. But my Kinsman above all the rest rejoyced, (I suppose) having so sure a pawn in his hands, all pure links of Gold, with which he might pay both Principal and Interest: but when he found it was not Gold, but Alchymy, being no better (taking away its gilding and fashion) then Brass or Copper, who can imagine what strange faces he did make? Cursing my Mother for bringing forth such a *Picara*, such a notorious Thief as I was.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Guzman *sailing towards* Spain, Sayavedra *falls into a Calenture or violent Feaver; is mad, crying out that he was* Guzman de Alfarache; *throws himself into the Sea, and is drowned.*

WE had such fair weather when we departed from *Genoa*, that the day following we doubled the Cape of *Noli*, and towards evening discovered (to our general joy) the Coast of *Spain*; but coming to the (a) *Pomas de Marsella*, our good wind began to leave us, and our hearts were sad and heavy, occasioned by the violent increase of a contrary wind, Ægyptian Clouds, black and dark as Hell, that invironed us on all sides. The storm augmented; and an unguided Galley fell foul upon us, that with her Prow struck off our Rudder. Wherefore losing our Helm and Hope lost, we despaired of any remedy to preserve us from the mercy of the Seas: but some of the ablest Mariners, making a Vertue of Necessity, placed a couple of Oars to supply our want of a Rudder, wherewith they guided the Galley, but with great danger and labour.

(a) *The word* Poma *is used for a womans paps or dugs, and by similitude may be taken for a Promontory standing out to the Sea.*

Nor can I here express the least part of what I saw and heard, how many invocations of Saints; every one calling on that which was most famous in his own Country: what various Devotions, and general recourse to their Prayers; how many absurdities were committed amongst them,

Guzman *in a great storm at Sea.*

them, confessing themselves one to another; as if they could be their own Ghostly Fathers, and had power to absolve them; others in a loud voice made confession of their sins, stretching out their throats towards heaven, as if God were deaf or thick of hearing.

In this woful manner did our poor weather-beaten Galley endure in misery, together with those that were in her, till the next day following; when, with the clearing of the Sky, and the brightness of the Sun, we began to recover breath; so that now all was joy, and our sorrow turned into mirth.

I did not so much fear this storm, nor so sensibly apprehend the danger thereof, as I trembled, lest by a contrary wind, and the new Rigging of our Galley, I should be carried back to *Genoa*. It was not the Sea, but the Shame, that wrought upon me. This was it that made me say to my self when the winds blew, and the Seas raged, That all the rest did suffer for my sake; and, that I was the *Jonas* for whom this Tempest was raised, that I might be reduced to repentance.

Sayavedra *sick of a Feaver.*

Sayavedra became so Sea-sick, that he fell into a Calenture. It would have moved the most obdurate hearts to compassion; for when we were in most eminent danger, being mad, whilest others were at Confession, he would cry out, I am the Ghost of *Guzman de Alfarache*, that goes wandring about the World: whereat he made me often both fear and laugh: but if he had revealed any of my actions, no man would have credited him, for that they saw he was distracted.

He

He continued committing a thousand extravagancies; repeating to all he met, whatsoever I had told him concerning my life: but that which pleased me most, was to hear him speak all these things of himself, as if he had been the real *Guzman*.

That Night *Sayavedra* rising in his frantick fit, leapt out at the open place, where our Rudder was lost, into the Sea; whom we could never afterwards see, although the Mariner that kept watch, presently cry'd out, *Hombre a la Mar: There is a Man fallen into the Water.* We threw overboard the Hatches, and some Planks, whereon he might float till we either bore up to him with the Galley, or hoisted out our Boats: but all diligence was vain; for in a short time we were out of his call, and he buried in the Sea; all of them much lamenting his misfortune, and endeavoring to comfort me, because I seemed outwardly to be as much grieved for him, as if he had been my Brother, or the dearest Friend I had in the world. *Sayavedra drowns himself.*

Having put on this seeming heaviness, I knew not how suddenly to shake it off: At last they called one that had been condemned to the Galleys; he was studious, and having a Book, wherein he writ several passages, he read this unto me: and requiring their attention, he began as followeth.

There was in *Sevil* a Merchant, by Name *Micer Jacobo*, rich and honest: he had two Sons, and one Daughter, which were carefully educated; insomuch that she at the Needle excelled all others, having been bred up in a Monastery of Nuns, her Mother dying in Childe- *A true and strange story of a Merchant in Sevil.*

birth

birth when she was born. Now in regard that the goods of Fortune are mutable, especially in Merchants; it so fell out, that his two Sons returning from the *Indies* with store of Gold and Silver, when they were within sight of the Bar of *San Lucar*, wanting little of their own house, there arises a huge storm on the sudden, insomuch that this unfortunate Ship ran desperately on a Rock: which blow not onely opened her womb, but devoured both men and goods immediately.

When this heavy News had gotten wing, it lightly flew to the Fathers ears, who in short time after for grief also died. Leave we these, to come to the Daughter; who having lost all her Wealth and Friends, was put to her shifts so extreamly, that she knew not how to maintain her self in the Nunnery: So that in short time, it was notified unto her, That she should either leave the House, or if she had a minde to stay, forthwith to assign her Dowry.

But not being able to comply with the second condition, she was forc'd to entertain the former. This distressed Maid was so cunning at her Needle, that her fame was spread over all the City.

To this sum, let me adde her Vertues and her Beauty, which were both Excellent. Notwithstanding all this, being sensible of her estate, she got her a Lodging, where she was accompanied with other vertuous Maidens, there with the labour of her fingers ends she lived very frugally.

The Archbishop of that City had a great desire to have some curiosities made for him, as cer-

tain

tain wrought Chalice-clothes, neat Towels, Napkins, Handkerchiefs, and the like, to wrap the Hoast in, bordered about with Historical works, best fitting the use whereto they were put.

And after much enquiry, *Dorotea* was discovered (for so was this Gentlewoman called) who upon promise of good payment, entertained the work; and considering, that for such a curious piece, she must have the finest gold thread that Money could procure, she borrowed the assistance of some friends in the buying of it. And searching the Gold-beaters shops, it was her chance to come to a handsome yong fellow, well behav'd, who had newly set up; and to get custome, strove to furnish his shop exactly. Of this man she was willing to buy her Gold; and to that end told him, she had but a small sum now to lay out, but should be a better customer as her stock encreased. This young Occupier, when he had beheld the Maidens composed countenance, he fell so in love with her, that the least he could willingly give her, was all the Gold she had occasion for; and embracing the occasion he now had to express his affection to her, he said unto her, Mistriss, if the Gold be for your turn, take what you want, and pay me now what you can well spare, and the rest as you shall receive it from your Work-Masters.

Dorotea made him payment of what she had; and taking what Gold she wanted, left the place of her abode, and departed: Then had the young man time to search the wound which *Cupids* arrow had made: so vehemently was his Soul ravished with her beauty, that he could

neither eat nor drink: at last, understanding her condition was somewhat poor, he resolved to attempt the quenching of his hot desire by Marriage.

In a short time, after some few visits, he gained her good will, and those that were most conversant with her. Amongst them, there lived four Sisters; to the eldest of which they all shewed respect, as well for her wisdome, as her priority of years. Into her friendship our young man endeavors to enter, reverencing her, and presenting such tokens to her, as might best suit with the respect he bore her.

In remembrance of which, this Gentlewoman so wrought with *Dorotea*, that the Match was soon finish'd, to both their likings, but especially on *Bonifacio* his part, (so was he called:) having now gotten a Wife, he turns himself to his imployment, and she to hers, working up all the Gold thread her husband made: their gains were great; and to fulfil their happiness, their love was exceeding equal.

But the Devil, an enemy to peace, breaks the bonds of their affections, and followed her so close, that even when she was at Mass, or receiving the Sacrament, young Gallants, discreet in Carriage, neat in Clothes, and sweet in their Perfumes, fell a courting her, following and soliciting her, whithersoever she went. But these tricks failed, the Devil could not reap the fruit he sowed, nor did she yield to any of their temptations.

Amongst those Gallants desirous to serve her, there was one that was (a) *Teniente* of the Town, a young man, unmarried, and rich; he lived over against

(a) Teniente, *is one that is a Substitute to another in an Office; a Lieutenant, A tenendo, as having the charge and keeping of some fort or Castle, which he faithfully keeps and maintains.*

againſt her houſe, and in ſuch a manner, that he could diſcern whatſoever *Bonifacio* and *Dorotea* did; which he narrowly obſerved, ſo that ſometimes he would diſcover them when going to bed. This *Teniente* making uſe of this occaſion, did labour to receive ſome favour from her. But at laſt finding his labour in vain, he was forced to give over his (*a*) ſuit, finding an impoſſibility to make her any grains lighter then ſhe was.

(*a*) *The Spaniſh word is,* Bolver al puesto con la cana; *To pitch down his ſtandard, to proceed no farther.*

There went in the ſame Dance another ſelf-afflicting Lover, a Gentleman of *Burges*, whoſe name was *Claudio*, young, diſcreet, and rich; but neither his great parts, nor the *Tenients* great power, could move *Dorotea* one jot, who defended her ſelf firmly againſt thoſe Eagles of *Caucaſus*, that thought to make a prey of her.

This *Claudio* had to his ſervant a fine ſhe-ſlave; ſhe was ſo nimble-witted, and ſo apt to work her ſelf into all folks affections, that ſhe could work wonders; or, as the *Spaniards* ſay, *could make Water-creſſes grow on a Bed.* This Slave, after ſhe was informed of her Maſters purpoſe, ſaid, O my dear Maſter, *Little oyl, and leſs labour, will bring this Wheel about*; I will deliver the Hare into thy lap; and if I do not, call me no more *Sabina*, the Daughter of *Haia*. From that time ſhe undertook the task; and firſt of all, makes a delicate little Basket, of the green Sprigs of Myrtles, Pome-citrons, and Oranges, compoſed in a curious manner. This Basket ſhe bears to the Gold-beater, telling him ſhe was Servant to a Lady-Abbeſs of a Covent, who having occaſion for ſome of his beſt Gold, had ſent him a token, to the end that might binde him to deliver the pureſt gold he had; which if he did, ſhe promiſed

large rewards, and that she would often bestow upon him such curiosities as those religious places afford. *Bonifacio* was much gladded with her large promises, and more with the earnest he had received, which he (as soon as he had dispatch'd the Slave with the Gold) carries up to his wife, by whom it was likewise joyfully received; and the more, because she in Childhood used the like exercises in such like places: she then entreated her husband, that when she came again, they might be acquainted together.

Some six dayes after, *Sabina* returns, boasting the Gold was so good, she was come for more; and presented to him a little Image of the rinde of Limmons, from the Lady-Abbess, which he entreated her to deliver to his wife, which was above. Now was the *Sop fallen into the Honey-pot.* It fell out as pat, as a Pudding for a Friars mouth: But as if she were ignorant, she said, Ah, thou naughty man, art thou married indeed? my Mistris took thee for a Batchelor, and talk'd of marrying thee to a Lay-maiden of our house, beautiful and rich. But after some such like discourse, up she goes; who when she saw *Dorotea*, after her *Moorish* fashion, ran towards her, and throws her self down at her feet; she shewed her such reverence as is impossible to utter: And admiring several works which she there saw, she vowed to bring *Dorotea* acquainted with the Lady; and for that purpose would one day fetch her to be merry at the Monastery: so takes her leave. On the next Munday she returns with several Conserves, and other Toyes, to *Dorotea*; telling her, she had a request unto her, which was, That the ensuing Mushday, being the

Proverb. *Cayo la Sopa en la miel.*

Feast

Feast of S. *John Baptiſt*, and the Sunday before it their firſt *Veſpers*, ſhe would do her the favour to ſtay thoſe two dayes with her in the Monaſtery, doing penance with her: and that the Abbeſs would take no pleaſure in the Comedy, which the Nuns were afterwards to repreſent, if ſhe did not come to ſee it acted, with other Gentlewomen appointed for her Company. *Dorotea* anſwered, She could willingly comply with the Lady-Abbeſſes command: but this was in her Husbands power, not in hers. This were fine (ſaid *Sabina*) if your Husband ſhall deny ſo ſmall a requeſt: let me not thrive, if I go out of doors this eight dayes, without his leave. *Bonifacio* not ſeeing the *Snake that lay lurking in the graſs*, ſaid, (By my life) *Sabina* hath pleaded hard, ſhe muſt not be denied, ſeeing it is my Lady-Abbeſſes pleaſure to have it ſo; and therefore I prethee (Sweetheart) go & recreate thy ſelf there theſe two days: And when (*Sabina*) theſe Gentlewomen that you ſpeak of go to the Monaſtery, I pray order it ſo, that they may take my wife with them. *Sabina* being well ſpoken, returned thanks in good language, & ſo left them. And having reach'd home, ſhe, over-ſwoln with joy, ran haſtily and careleſly to her Maſter with theſe her crums of Comfort. *Clandio*, underſtanding now how *Sabina* had ordered it, provided certain women of his acquaintance (to whom he might deliver any ſecret) to help him towards the concluſion of his purpoſe.

Proverb. *La culebra eſta entre la yerra.*

The appointed day being come, ſome of them apparelled like Wives, ſome like Maidens, and others like grave (*a*) Matrons, went with *Sabina* to go fetch *Dorotea*. They come to her houſe, knock at the door: her Husband opens, who having

(*a*) *The Spaniſh word is*, Duena, *and ſignifieth an ancient Gentlewoman that is a widow.*

having before eſpied them, call'd to his Wife to haſten, ſuppoſing thoſe were they that were to call her. Down comes *Dorotea*, no leſs innocent then contented: all lovingly ſalured her; and her Husband having conſigned her over to them, they place her in the midſt, and ſo joyfully ſet forward on their Voyage. As they were walking through the Monaſtery, one of them with a Veil on her head, and of more reverend aſpect then the reſt, cries out, Ay me, forgetful wretch that I am, we have forgot to call *Donna Beatriz* the new-married Bride: Another anſwers, By the Bones of my Father, you ſay true; I no more thought on her, then I remember the firſt *Smock I wore*. Let us turn down here, and we ſhall be there immediately. Then ſhe that led the way, having a *Roſario* hanging about her neck, brought them to *Claudio* his houſe, where they knock: A Slave out of the window asks their buſineſs: one anſwers, Run and tell your Miſtris we ſtay for her. The Slave made as if ſhe had gone to deliver this Meſſage, and anon returns with this anſwer, That her Miſtris would come as ſoon as ſhe had faſtened on her Mantle; and deſired them in the mean while to reſt themſelves in the Hall. Whereupon, they entred through a ſpacious Hall, well furniſh'd, where they remained; onely two of them paſſed forward with *Dorotea*, into a middling ſquare room, hung with Cloth of Silver, with a Bed ſutable thereto; where theſe three ſate down, and had ſcarce warmed the Cuſhions, when the two that were with her began to cry, Good, good, what does this *Donna Beatriz* mean to make us ſtay ſo long! Fie, what a tedious thing is this! I care not,

Proverb. *No me acordava mas della, que de la primera camiſa, que me veſti.*

not, sayes the other, if I go in and see what she is doing: I prethee Sister, good Wench go with me, and help to hasten her. Which was no sooner said, but they both vanish'd, leaving *Dorotea* alone.

When all were gone, *Claudio* comes in, and sitting upon one of the Cushions next *Dorotea*, he began to court her, and discover the plot he had made to get her there. When she perceived how she was betraid, poor *Dorotea* was not a little troubled; for she knew him by sight, and guess'd at his pretensions. Tears and prayers were the best Orators she could use; yet both too weak: she resisted as well as she could; but *Claudio* courting her one while with kinde words, and when they could not prevail, breaking forth into actions of violence against her will, he pluckt from her such fruits as he could reach to, but not as he desired. But in the end, when she saw that *Claudio* still got more ground upon her person, she yielded up the Fort. They two were alone, the door fast lock'd; the term long, (two dayes) *Claudio* with his Friends at hand, she a lone woman; he strong, and she weak: They fared daintily, dined, supt, and slept together; but their pleasure was but short, & their rest unexpectedly interrupted. For the Devil never made Pye, but himself eat part. Whilest they were in their jollity, the house was destitute of order; the Servants by glutting themselves, took the wrinkles from their guts; and pulling the faucets out of the Hogsheads, drank so liberally, that at last they crept to Bed, as a Cat doth *up a wall*, upon all four: Leaving the Chimney full of fire, and a great deal of dry Wood standing by, the fire

Proverb. *Tra las casas: gate ande.*

takes hold of the brands, and they communicated their flames to their fellows; so that towards midnight, all that quarter of the house was burnt, and not perceived, so fast they slept. It was the *Vespers* of S. *John*; and the *Teniente* using to round the Town to prevent disorder, discovered the fire, which led him to *Claudio* his house, where they knock'd, but in vain; some being weary, others drunk, they all slept hard: when no other way could be found to get in, they broke down the gates; in doing which, the noise and clamour awaked *Claudio*, who being amazed at the noise, hastened with his Sword in his hand (he and *Dorotea* being both naked) and opened the door; and when he saw the fire, return'd for something to cover him, that so he might escape by flight. The *Teniente* thought, that some strangers might get into the house, (seeing the Chamber-door open) and were perhaps rifling the room: hasting thither to secure the goods, he found these two Lovers running about the Chamber to seek their clothes; and having them in their hands, neither had their own, but interchanged through haste. The *Teniente* straight knew *Dorotea*, and was extremely astonished; for though he saw it, he hardly had the faith to believe his own eyes. So desperately he was bent upon revenge, that he presently sent them both to Prison; but was most incensed against *Dorotea*, for rejecting him, and admitting of another. They carried her away, her face being covered with a Mantle, and ordered that she should not be seen, till Information should be made against her.

But observe what an easie thing it is, to rub

spots

ſpots out of Icing-glaſs. The Judge was no ſooner that night in his bed, but *Dorotea* was out of his reach: For *Sabina* takes out of her lodging a good fat Capon, and a good piece of Gammon of Bacon, Bread, a Flagon of Wine, and Money in her Purſe; and clapping a Bed, Sheets, and Coverlet on her head, with a little Basket on her arm, away ſhe trugs to the Priſon; ſhe entreated the Jaylor to give her leave to carry in that Bed and Supper for one of her Maſters Maids, who becauſe ſhe was too ſlow on ſo urgent an occaſion, in bringing a Bucket to draw water for the fire; the *Teniente* in his heat had committed her.

With this excuſe, and four Royals of four which ſhe gave him, he lets her in: he could not ſee her face, by reaſon of the luggage ſhe bore on her head. In this manner ſhe goes to *Dorotea*, who ſhe found almoſt dead; but after ſome diſcourſe which paſſed between them, ſhe had ſo much life in her, as to put on *Sabina's* apparel, and to try whether the door-keeper could know her or not: ſhe called him, and gave him the Supper; which when he had taſted, he takes the Flagon of Wine, and gives it a good ſwig, reſerving the remainder till the next day. Whilſt his Corps was feaſting, *Dorotea's* brains were not idle: for taking up the Bed on her head, ſhe approaches unto him, and told him, The Maid would neither eat nor ſleep, till ſhe was releaſed: ſo goes out, leaving *Sabina* in her place, who had ſo ordered it, that *Dorotea* ſhould return to *Claudio* his houſe (as ſhe did) and the next day accompanied with ſome women, ſhe again reaches her own houſe, as ſhe left it. The *Teniente* intended

intended to be deeply revenged on them. But *Claudio* having notice of the buſineſs, intreated a Gentleman to go to the (*a*) *Aſſiſtente* of *Sevil*, and deſire him to come in perſon to the Court, and free him from the injury, which was ſo unjuſtly done unto him.

(*a*) *The principal Magiſtrate and Chief Commander in* Sevil, *is call'd there by the name of* Aſſiſtente.

The *Teniente* likewiſe at Dinner-time going to his window, preſently eſpied *Dorotea* and her Husband at the Table. He admired how this ſhould be: Hereupon he ſends to the Priſon, to know who had freed the woman he had ſent the night before. Anſwer was made, that ſhe was there. Then did he ſtamp, and doubted his own wits. This day paſt, and the next came the *Aſſiſtente* with his two *Tenientes*, who willed that *Claudio* ſhould be called forth, and the woman that was impriſoned with him; who when they came (according to their and the Keepers Confeſſion) were approved the ſame: There was none but knew *Sabina* was his Slave; ſo finding nothing againſt them, they were ſet at liberty. Yet *Claudio* paid ſoundly; for when he came home, he found the greateſt part of his houſe and goods burnt, together with a Siſter of his that accompanied *Dorotea* from her houſe; and with her, his *Diſpenſer*, and three other ſervants. This affront to his honour (for it was generally known) did ſo afflict his minde, that he fell grievouſly ſick: And not deſiring life to any other end, then to lament for his follies; on his amendment he retired himſelf to the top of a Mountain in a deſert place, where betaking him to the Religious Order of S. *Francis*, he ended his dayes. *Dorotea* remained with her Husband as before; the *Teniente* as much diſcontented as

ever;

ver; and *Bonifacio* (honeſt man) untouch'd in his honour: For *Sabina*, and moſt that knew the front, died in few dayes after.

With this Story, and other entertainments to beguile the time, we arrived in *Barcelona*.

Being on ſhore, I told my Friend, Captain Favello, That in the ſtorm I made a Vow not to lay three nights in any part of *Spain*, till I came to *Sevil*, to viſit the Image of our *Lady del Valle*, to whom I had offered my Devotions, and would conſecrate ſomething to her for my Preſervation. Guzman *leaves Captain* Favello.

It grieved him to the ſoul to loſe my company: but it could not be otherwiſe; for I was in fear, leſt they of *Genoa* ſhould purſue me in ſome ſmall Veſſel.

So having bought three Beaſts to carry my ſelf and my Trunks, I entertained a Servant; and pretending I was for *Sevil*, took leave for ever.

THE

THE ROGUE.

OR,

The second part of the Life of GUZMAN *de* ALFARACHE.

The Second Book.

CHAP. I.

Guzman *departs from* Barcelona *to* Saragosa: *where he peruses the Statutes of* Gotam-Colledge, *otherwise called,* The Hospital of Fools.

FLying from the mischief that might follow me, I went out of *Barcelona:* forsaking the beaten Rode, I betook my self to unknown paths. I talk'd of Vows that I had made, and invented a thousand other lyes, that I might defeat the spies of their purpose, nor finde the pricking of the Hare that was now far from the Hounds.

The Mules were mine own: my Servant but newly come to me, and unacquainted with my tricks:

I ſtaid not long in one place; and alwayes changing my Clothes, becauſe I would not appear twice in one dreſs. In this manner I travelled till I came to *Saragoſa*; rejoycing that I was arrived to that noble and famous City.

I walked the next day through that ſpacious ſtreet which they call the *Coſſo*, which was much graced by a fair young Widow I viewed at a Window. I made more turns about her Houſe, then a Horſe doth in a Mill; and although ſhe did not ſeem offended with me, yet I thought ſhe was weary of my fooliſh ſilence; and ſaid to her ſelf, What painted Aſs is this? What Piece without Powder? that hath made me wait ſo long, making proffers as though he would ſhoot, and hath not as yet diſcharged the Musket. She went from the window, leaving me to expect her return. At laſt, finding my hopes deceived, I went to my Lodging, and in a careleſs manner I queſtioned with my Hoſt concerning this Lady; who told me, She was very beautiful, well deſended, and very rich.

Whileſt I was talking with mine Hoſt, my head being well ſtuft, by reaſon of an extream cold, I pluckt a Handkerchief out of my pocket, and blew my Noſe: which having done, I look'd upon it, as if that Oyſter had afforded me a Pearl; it being the Cuſtome of that Countrey ſo to do.

The crafty Rogue mine Hoſt, perceiving that I ſcoffed at their Cuſtomes, ſpoke thus unto me in a low voyce, *Fly, Sir, fly; Hide your ſelf, quickly, quickly.* Poor and miſerable man that I was, how ill did thoſe words ſound! How my heart was ſcorch'd with them! He had ſcarce ended

Guzman put into a needleſs fear by his hoſts means

ended his words, when at two leaps I got me behinde the Curtains of the Bed: He being ignorant of my Villanies, thought I had done this innocently, as being ſtartled at the ſuddenneſs thereof: and ſo inſtantly breaking into a loud laughter, he merrily ſaid, I perceive, Sir, you are not troubled with the Gout: your Worſhip may come forth if you pleaſe; as God would have it, the ſtorm is paſt, and you may ſafely ſhew your ſelf upon the Hatches. I came forth as pale as aſhes, with death pictur'd in my face, admiring that the ſudden fright had not made me leap out of the window into the ſtreets.

I diſſembled it the beſt I could, leſt I might raiſe a duſt to put out mine own eyes. Being come to my ſelf, I ask'd him what the myſtery was. I pray Sir, ſaid he, content your ſelf, and give me two ſhillings from you. I put my hand in my pocket, and threw him forth a Royal, asking wherefore he demanded it. He falling into a louder vein of laughing, with a merry look, ſaid, Sir, I have a *Procuration* ſubſtituted by the *Adminiſtrators* of an *Hoſpital*, for the recovering of certain rights which I am to Challenge of them that come to my houſe, if they commit any Forfeiture contained in the ſaid *Procuration*. In good faith, if my Hoſts laughing had not cleared the doubt, I verily believe I ſhould have fallen dead for fear: His breath put breath into me. So that ſeeing him upon the merry pin, I ſaid unto him, (a) *Cuerpo de mi*: As I am an honeſt man, ſince I have paid the penalty, I will know the fault I have committed. Becauſe your Worſhip (ſayes mine Hoſt) ſeems

(a) *A common Oath or Aſſeveration in Spain: Engliſh, Body of me.*

to

to be a discreet Gentleman, I will reade you a Bead-roll of such Statutes I have for recovery of those Amercements, and those Penalties wherewith they are to be punished, who incur the danger of them. This Royal is a Fee goes to the Beadle for your entrance. He went his way, and returns with a great Book under his arm; wherein, he said, he set down the Admittance of those of that Corporation. He began to reade some of their Statutes, whereof I will repeat unto you, such as remain in my Memory: And they are these.

The Statutes and Constitutions of *GOTAM-COLLEDGE:* OR, The Hospital of Fools.

WEE Reason, sole Soveraign of the World, not acknowledging any Superior: For the reforming of mens manners against the perverse wilfulness of Folly, which hath multiplied in such abundance, to our notable detriment, and the damage of all Mankinde: For to avoid the inconveniences which so corrupt a Canker may cause, that it may not dilate it self any farther, to the destruction of our loving Subjects, whose welfare we tender as our own; We Will and Command, Publish and Proclaim these our Laws, to all that are or shall be born, by the Power and Consent of our Councel of State, That they be held for such as are now by us established; and that they be punctually observed in all and the least point herein specified, as you will answer it

to your peril, and incur the punishment, which for the infringing of our Laws, is in that case provided.

Moreover, for the due execution of Justice, we in our wisdomes have thought it meet, to nominate certain Officers of sufficiency and trust, such as shall be requisite for this so important a business. And therefore we do assign for Judges, good Policy, Curiosity, *and* Sollicitude: *To the end that they representing our own proper Person, may uprightly administer Justice: giving them full and plenary Authority, to apprehend, release, punish or pardon any person or persons upon just cause; referring our said Judges to be directed by these our Laws and Ordinances. Furthermore, we do substitute for our Attorney-General,* Diligence; *and our Beadle that shall warn them to the Court, shall be* Fame.

I. *First therefore, any person or persons that shall talk to themselves in the streets, or in their private house, being alone, we condemn them for Fools for three Moneths: Within which time, we will and command, That they reform this their foolery; and in case they shall not, Our pleasure is, They have a more peremptory time allotted of some three Terms, or more: within which time they shall bring a Certificate of their amendment, upon pain of being held for convicted Fools; and we command our Ancients of the Company to bring in their Evidence, and punish them as violaters of our Laws.*

II. Item, *They that shall walk through any Brick or Stone-Pavement, with care or study, pitching their Toes or Heels in a direct line, side, or corner of the stones, shall be condemned as aforesaid.*

III. Item, *They that walk with their Cloaks*

under

under one arm, and patting the wall with their hand, ſo as to make Indentures with their fingers, let them be admitted Scholars of our Colledge. Provided they have ſix Moneths of approbation allowed: In which time we command them to be reformed: Otherwiſe, we Ordain, That the Dean of our Colledge put his Coat upon him (according to Cuſtome) his Cap, and his Bawble, with the other Ornaments, and afterwards be held a profeſſed Fool.

IV. Item, *They that play at Bowls, when they have thrown their Bowl, if it run awry, and they likewiſe follow it awry, thinking their Bowl ſhall incline the ſame way their body doth, ſhall dye in this their ſin. And we command the like be underſtood of thoſe, who ſeeing ſomething fall from a high place, ſhrink their ſhoulders, wry their mouthes, or turn up the white of their eyes. Likewiſe of thoſe, that cutting with Sheers, or blunt Knives, ſhall draw their mouth on t'one ſide like a Playce, loll out their tongue like a Calf, wrinkle up their cheeks like a ſtarched piece of Parchment, &c. Our pleaſure is, That they alſo take the degree of Fools.*

V. Item, *They, who having ſent their ſervant on an errand, ſhall wait for him at the door, imagining that in ſo doing he may haſte the more; We condemn ſuch to acknowledge their error, on pain, That in caſe of refuſal they be ſeverely proceeded againſt.*

VI. Item, *They that from a window ſpit down, whether it be to take (as with a Plummet) the evenneſs of the building, or to ſee if his ſpittle lights on ſuch a ſtone which his eye hath ſelected; We command that they retract this their folly on ſhort warning, upon pain of being judg'd publick Profeſſors of the ſame.*

VII. Item, *They who travelling, ſhall enquire of Paſſengers, how far to ſuch a Town, thinking by this they ſhall the ſooner reach it; We injoyn them for penance, The badneſs of way, The Carriers jading of them, and mine Hoſts cozening of them: Not inflicting greater puniſhment, out of the hopes of their amendment.*

VIII. Item, *They who when they make water, ſtreak the wall with their urine, as if framing ſome antick figures, or ſhall piſs in the duſt, making circles; We comma d they do ſo no more, on pain to be puniſhed by their Judge, and delivered over to an Ancient of the Houſe.*

IX. Item, *They who have but little meat before them, ſhall divert themſelves from feeding, to entertain the company with diſcourſe, minding more to fill other mens ears, then their own bellies, by which means they riſe a-hungerd; Foraſmuch as theſe are dy'd in the woell, we allow them a Pill, and remit them to be Regiſtred amongſt incurable Fools.*

X. Item, *They who ſhall buy the courſer ſort of Victuals for the ſaving of their Purſe, as if a Phyſician, Apothecary or Surgeon, were not much dearer then the beſt meat; We condemn them to a general diſgracing of themſelves, declaring them to be profeſſed Fools.*

XI. Item, *They who in Summer-nights ſit till their breech ake, gazing on the Clouds, and forming the figures of Serpents, Lyons, or other Beaſts; We pronounce them, Brothers of this Fraternity, but not to be capable of the Priviledges thereof, nor that they have any Wax-lights allowed them on Feſtival-dayes.*

XII. Item, *They who wearing black or white Shoes, ſhall, to take away the duſt from them, clean*

them

them with their Cloak, as if that were not more coſtly; We condemn them for neat Fools: And in caſe they be Noble-men, for their greater honour, we will have them treble Fool'd.

XIII. Item, *They who meeting a friend they have not long ſeen, ſhall ſay, Are you alive, Sir? Is there ſuch a man upon the Earth? when he was never in Heaven, and ſtands before him; ſuch muſt we have inrolled: And we further will, That all ſuch bear a Mark of Admiration; and that during our pleaſure they never go without it.*

XIV. Item, *They who blowing their Noſe upon their Hankerchief, look ſteddily upon it, and pry into it, as if ſome Pearls had dropt from thence, which they ſeem to ſecure, by wrapping them cloſely up; Such we condemn for Brothers of our ſaid Foundation; and as oft as they thus offend, we will, That they give an Alms to the Hoſpital of incurable Fools.*

When he was come thus far, and I ready to burſt my heart with laughing I ſaid unto him, Now ſeeing you have adviſed me of theſe things, that I may correct my errors, tell me whereabout this Hoſpital is. But the night parting us, I left the reſt to another dayes reading.

Having a deſire to fetch a turn or two before the Widows Lodging, I call'd my Servant, to fetch me a gallant Suit of Clothes that I had in my Trunk; and taking my Sword under my Arm, I walk'd into the City with a heart ſo well contented, that I would not have changed my preſent eſtate with any Prince in Chriſtendom.

At the corner of a ſtreet I met with two Women; the one reaſonably handſome, the other ſeemed

to be her Servant. I ſtopt them in their way; and they ſtood ſtill. I diſcourſed with one of them; and going to put my hands under her Mantle, the crafty Whore, without any ſudden retreat, feigned to defend from that friendly violence. Whileſt I was buſying my hands about her face and neck, ſhe with hers was not idle; but putting them into my Pocket, took out all the Money, and what elſe was there: and in this heat of mine, I had no feeling of this ache. She had no ſooner taken from me about one hundred Royals, but ſhe ſaid, (Good Sir) let me intreat you to have patience, and expect me at the corner of this ſtreet, from which you ſaw us come; and, at my return I will conduct you to my houſe, where lodges onely my ſelf and my Maid; where I aſſure you I will be at your ſervice. Go (dear Sir) whither I have directed you, that you may not be ſeen in my company: for though I am a married Woman, and of honourable Parents, yet you ſeem a Gentleman of that nobleneſs, that I would willingly hazard both my perſon and reputation, to content you.

His wench picks his pocket.

I ſtood up cloſe in the corner, where I continued from eight at night, till the clock ſtruck eleven. When I perceived it was ſo late, I imagined ſhe had ſome Gallant to her Servant, who would not let her depart this night: nor could I ſo much blame her; for my ſelf would have done the like, if once ſhe had been within my doors.

The next night I went to the ſame place, where I found all quiet, no noiſe or ſign to be heard at any door in all the ſtreet. I fetcht many turns, cough'd, ſpit, made a noiſe with my feet: but all was in vain, and to no purpoſe.

I went towards my Inne: by the way I eſpied at

a window a bulk, that by the voice I knew to be a Woman; her face I could not ſee, it was ſo dark. I began to talk youthfully (or rather fooliſhly) to her: She told me, I was miſtaken: but ſhe had a Kitchin-Maid, a Drudge, that ſcoured the Pots and Pans, to whom I might addreſs my ſelf (perhaps) with ſucceſs.

In the midſt of our diſcourſe, comes out one of *Beelzebubs* Curs, that barked ſo loud, that it was impoſſible for us to hear or underſtand each other. Seeking to remedy this, I ſaw by the wall a little black thing, which I ſuppoſed to be a ſtone: preſently I catch'd it up in my hands; but it was not a ſtone, nor any thing ſo hard: I quickly found that I had beſmeared my Fingers; and ſtriking it off, I flung my Hand ſo ſtrongly againſt the wall, that I was much pained: and to eaſe the tingling of my nails, I put my fingers to my mouth; but I ſoon repented of what I had done; my often ſpitting would not mend the miſtake: and feeling in my Pocket for my Handkerchief to help my ſelf, there was no ſuch thing to be found. This made me mad, to ſee how my mouth and hands were enamell'd: and, to encreaſe my vexation, the ſcurvy Dog did ſo perſecute me with his bawling, that the Gentlewoman was forced to withdraw her ſelf from the window, and I to ſeek out ſomething to free me from this odious ſtink. I rubb'd my teeth againſt the wall, and in a rage returned to my Inne, with an intention to return the next night to that ſtreet, to meet with the ſame Wench that had thus abuſed me.

Guzmans bad fortune with wenches.

CHAP. II.

Guzman *leaves* Saragosa, *and comes to Madrid, where he turns Merchant, marries, and becomes Bankrupt.*

BEing at my Lodging, I went to the Well, and pretending there to refresh my self (because my Servant should not be privy to this disgraceful accident) I caused him to draw me up two Buckets of water; with the one I wash'd my hands, and with the other, my mouth; having rubb'd off the skin from both, and yet I was not satisfied, I had such a conceit of this filthy odour, or rather ordure. Nor could I afterward sleep, for thinking on that truth which my Doxy had told me, That in all my life I should not meet with a more quick and nimble hand. At last I considered with my self, that a lusty strong Mule could hardly bear the Silver, Gold, Pearls, precious Stones and Jewels, which I had stollen out of *Genoa*; and therefore why should I vex, for being cheated of so small a trifle?

(a) Pilar de Saragosa, *one of the most famous Churches in the world, for that our blessed Lady appeared to the Apostle James, and commanded him there to build a Church in her honour,* Pedra Nineda, l. 10. Monarch. Eccles. cap. 35. sect. 4.

In the morning I rose, and went to Mass, and visited the image of our Lady (a) *Pilar*, which is one of the most remarkable places for Devotion in the world.

Afterwards in the same street, I saw the widow washing her hands in the window. I placed my self at the corner of a wall, looking on her with a wanton eye, and a smiling countenance.

And whilest I was performing this my love-exercise,

ercise she did me the honour to stand still in the same place. Many Gentlemen past by, yet I thought none of them equal to me, either in the bravery of my Apparel or Person. All in me was in true Mood and Figure, in a full and perfect Symmetry in respect of the whole Frame. This I thought was the reason why I was more respected by her, then all the rest of her Servants.

Night approached, and she withdrew from the window, courteously glancing her eyes towards me: and when I saw the Casement shut, I went home to my lodging, considering with my self what course were best for me to steer.

The next morning when I was ready to go forth, my Host acquainted me, That there was in the City a great Uproar & Commotion, about the murther of a Person of Honor in the Market-place: and because I durst not adventure my self amongst that great confluence of people, for fear of being known, I resolved to depart the City; which I did that day, and came to *Alcala de Henares*, where I stayed eight days, it seeming to me one of the most pleasant places I had seen since I left *Italy*: and, if the love of the Court had not clapt Wings to my feet, I had continued there much longer: but because *Madrid* was *Patria communis, The common Mother to us all*; and a large field, where every man might range at pleasure; and those that lodge in one and the same house, scarce know each other: The thought of my security drew me thither.

Alcala, a University, about one days journy from Madrid.

(a) The face of the Court and Town was quite changed since my departure. There was no Grocer to be heard of, not any remembrance of such a man. In those Fields where I left Trees, I found Houses; Children become Men; Young grown Old; and the Old dead.

(a) Madrid much changed in a few years.

My lodging pleas'd me so well, that in a whole week I never went abroad, being chained at home by the sweet conversation of my Hostess; who, besides her Beauty, had a very acceptable and discreet carriage.

Guzman turns gallant.

Here I began to meditate upon my course of life; and resolved first upon Pride, being every day more gallant then other; and getting me a good Horse, and two Servants to attend me, I thought in this brave equipage with more ease to sell those Jewels I brought from *Genoa*.

My Hostess took notice of my ranting and prodigal expences; and having found out my disease, she knew what remedy to apply.

Amongst those many she-friends of hers that came to visit me, one of them brought with her a young Wench of exquisite beauty and wit. To this did I address my self: she answering me with disdain. But (*a*) Gifts mollifie Rocks; and with often Presents I made her very flexible. I continued this friendship with her some few dayes; in all which time she was like an *Alchymist*, to melt my Money, and extract quintessence from me.

(*a*) *Proverb* Davidas ablandon pennas.

Guzman again in love.

She was alwayes craving something of me, yet with that subtilty, as if she had been a woman of much riper years: not a Courtezan in the City that could surpass her in her Art. Nor do I wonder how, being so young, she could be so good a Proficient, considering how able a Tutoress she had of her Mother.

(*b*) *A place so called in the High Street of* Madrid, *neer unto* San Felipe.

One day she entreated me, that I would buy her a Gown of Crimson-Damask, which a Sale-man at the (*b*) *Puerta del Sol*, had to sell, trimmed with Gold-lace, and richly imbroidered; the price one thousand Royals. I was troubled at her demand, and

and the exceſſive liberty ſhe aſſumed to her ſelf, to diſpoſe of my Money at her pleaſure; and though I loved her dearly, yet would I not permit her, *Quedar a bolo en hioſto*, to top my Veſſel left ſhe ſhould ſuck me dry and not leave one drop in all my hogſhead. I ſeemed angry at her requeſt, and ſhe at my denial. The Mother and Daughter were both diſpleaſed with me, and conſulted with my Hoſteſs. And thus the Wolf and the Fox agreed againſt me.

Unkindniſs grows betwixt Guzman and his wench.

When I was at Dinner, I perceived an *Alquazil de Corte* coming towards me; who, when he was within hearing, cried out aloud. *Aqui morira Sanſon, y quantos con el ſon: Here ſhall Sampſon die, and all that are with him.* My end (ſaid I to my ſelf) is now at hand. I thruſt the Table from me, and roſe up in a great paſſion. Then ſaid the *Alquazil* to me, Pacifie your ſelf, Sir, for we come not to apprehend you for a Thief. The Catch-pole had made good the door; nor could I eſcape from the window, it being ſo far from the ſtreet, without apparent hazard of my neck.

Guzman arreſted.

Proverb.

Guzman much diſmaid.

I recollected my ſelf, and boldly asked him his buſineſs with me. He drew out a VVarrant, by vertue whereof the *Alcaldes* had commanded him to apprehend me upon the breach of a Law of theirs, *De* (*b*) *Vitiatione Virginum*; *For cracking of Maiden-heads, and deflowring of Virgins.*

(*b*) *The Spaniſh phraſe is,* Por el Virgo de Juſtilla.

The Devil take thee for a wicked woman, and me for a perfect Villain, (ſaid I) if this be not a moſt falſe Accuſation.

The *Alquazil* ſmiling upon me, ſaid, I believe you, yet I cannot releaſe you: therefore put on your Cloke, and go with me to Priſon.

I did fear this was but the Prologue to the Tragedy

gedy that would ſucceed; and but a pretence to cheat me of my wealth: for my Trunks I thought would be as ſafe in the ſtreet as there; and whither to remove them, I knew not. I took the *Alquazil* aſide, and entreated him, that he would deviſe ſome means, that they might not do me this injury; for that I was certain they intended to rob me, and nothing elſe.

Guzman treats in private with the Alquazil.

The Alquazil an honeſt man.

He was an honeſt man, (which was to me no ſmall good fortune, conſidering his Calling) and knew my innocency, as one that was acquainted with the contrary Party's courſe of life.

He left his ſervants to ſecure me, whileſt he went to finde out my Adverſaries, who were in my Hoſteſſes Chamber. He proffered to end the difference; and ſeeing them obſtinate, he proteſted to ſwear the Truth, and diſcover their Rogueries, if they would not accept of ſome reaſonable ſatisfaction.

The Alquazil wrought to favour Guzman.

He compounds the difference.

This made them refer the buſineſs wholly to him; who preſently compounded with them for two thouſand Royals. The Mother affirming upon Oath, That I promiſed to pay for the Gown, and double the value of it in Money. The ſum I paid, and went to the Regiſters Office, and cancelled the Bill.

Guzman leaves his lodging.

And now, although it was almoſt dark, I would not be perſwaded to lodge one night in the houſe of this perjured woman: for having paid the puniſhment of that ſin, wherein I had not offended; and the price of that meat whereof I had not taſted, I provided me a Houſe, put all things in order, and withdrew thither.

Guzman takes a houſe.

The *Alquazil* pitied my caſe, but bade me be contented, for I was not the firſt they had ſerved.

ed. I my self very lately (sayes he) saw one of the strangest cases in this nature, that I believe you ever heard of.

A Tale of a cunning Quean.

There was in this Town a beautiful Gentlewoman, who being necessitated, came hither to seek some means to live: she for a while profest her self a Maid. A Prince in this Town having minde to her, procures her love: He gives her a Ticket under his hand, to pay her 800 Ducats; in which Note she would have it set down, that that sum was bestowed by way of Dowry. The Prince failed of payment for her cut Lemmon at the day; she puts his Bond in suit, he answers not; she gets out an Execution, and recovers the Money.

A digression to another story, not much unlike the former.

There was lately another not much unlike this. A mean old woman having a beautiful Daughter, and not having wherewith to marry her, makes sale of her Virginity; and so prospe-rously, that she did it many times. One day, a gallant, single, and rich Gentleman, won her affection, enjoy'd her, and did liberally requite it. The old Mother being covetous, made her complaint to a Gentleman of the same place, aggravating her and her Daughters abuse. He in a jesting way answered, Thou knowest (*Grabrina* was, so was she called) the Illustrious *Signor General* will shortly be here; my counsel is, That you and your Daughter *Ricciolina*, deliver unto him, how *Signor Conde N.* hath deflowred your Daughter; and both weeping, further declare, that he hath falsified his word, having promised her two hundred Crowns, or get her a Husband. It was not long after that his Excellency came, before whom these women appearing, they

they opened their Accusation. Upon which relation his Excellency was much moved, and sent for the *Conde*; who when he appeared, was demanded, whether at any time he had had conversation with *Ricciolina* the Daughter of *Lena*? he ingenuously confest: Whereupon the *General* gave him such a fatherly reprehension, that he began to blush. Then calling forth *Ricciolina*, who stayed in the next room, he spoke in this manner; *Signor Conde*, if we should be severe, your punishment would be great; but for the love we bear you, we pardon your life, but condemn you to pay the double of your promise (which is four hundred Crowns) before you depart.

To this the *Conde*, with a decency most befitting, replied, Most Illustrious Sir, I have held my peace, most beseeming your humble Servant, and shall willingly bear what burthen your Excellency shall lay upon me: but as for these women, their Accusations are false: For though I had conversation with her, I gave her the agreement, and somewhat more. Notwithstanding, if you will so have it, I'le disburse so much Money, craving no longer time then to fetch it; which Money, putting into your Excellencies hands, I shall leave it to your disposal. Having leave, he fercht it; and while he was gone, the *General* took occasion to question *Ricciolina*. But first speaking to *Lena*, he said, Tell me (*Lena*) have you carried a good hand over your Daughter? Yes marry have I, said she. And did you never leave her alone, a day, or a night? No, Sir, quoth she. How came it then, that you should suffer your Daughter to be forced by the

Conde?

Conde? And you *Ricciolina*, having your Mothers company, why did you not resist? Then both weeping, said, The *Conde* was too strong; and therefore they besought his Excellency for Justice.

By this time the *Conde* was come, and had told out 400 Crowns, which the *General* gave to *Ricciolina*, with this Item, Take them Daughter, and look well to them, lest they are taken from thee: and *Lena*, have a care of your Daughter and her Money: So God be with you.

When they were gone, his Excellency thus said to the *Conde*, Get you after them, and regain the Money by fair means or foul, and give me the account thereof. The *Conde* no sooner heard it, but with a servant of his roundly overtook them; and saluting them kindely, accompanied them to their house: where when he was entred, he demanded his Money. And being intreaties were too weak, he assayed by force. But *Ricciolina*, who had bosomed her self, fought stoutly with her Nails and Teeth. The Mother to her assistance comes running, who so wounded the *Conde* with their womanish weapons, that he was far from recovering the prize. Their noise had by this time called a multitude of spectators: Some of which seeing the *Conde* all bloody, parted them; and having washed his hands and face, repairs to the *General*. They likewise not thinking he had gone thither, went with a further Complaint. But the *Conde* having first got thither, was first heard: then the women, who accused him for attempting to rob them, and threatning to kill them.

Then

Then said the *General*, He hath not your Money, hath he? No: replied they. How could you prevent him? They answered, We did so well best it our selves, that he could not. Very good, said he: And you *Ricciolina*, if your Mother had not holpt you, could you, do you think, withstand him? Yes indeed, quoth she, I fear him not, nor value him a straw; I think my self as strong as he. Then said the *General*, Where is the Purse? Pour out the Crowns on the board, Daughter, and see if they are all there. Which being done, the *General* perceiving the *Conde* was abused, said, *Signor Conde*, take your Money again, you have fought for it hard, it is yours. And to the young Queen, with a stern countenance, Thou lewd Baggage, couldst thou defend thy Money, and not thy self? Get you home, and let me hear no more of neither of you, lest I have the one whipt for a Whore, and the other carted for a Bawd. After the *General* had thus pronounced the Sentence, the business was ended, to their shames, and his own commendations. Then the *Alguazil* left me, and I betook me to my Collar and Girdle my Uncle sent me; which being of such value, that by report they might be discovered, I defaced and altered the fashion of them, that they might not be known, taking out the Precious Stones and Pearls that were in them, with the point of my Knife, and I thought I did very wisely, lest by preserving them as they were, I should make work for the Hang-man. With these Stones I began to turn Jeweller; first, informing my self of their worth, and causing them to be set, some in Coronets, Rings, Pendants for the ears, so that of

Guzmans riches.

of the ſame Gold and Stones, I made ſeveral pieces. Some I ſold for ready money; others I lent out at Weddings for good gains: ſome I riſled away at Dice. My ſtock increaſed; and I knew how to ſell at dear Rates upon truſt, and to uſe my Money to the beſt profit.

Guzman buys ground

There was to be ſold near adjoyning to my Houſe, a piece of Ground to build upon; part of this I bought, thinking it better to have a Houſe of my own, then to be troubled with often removes of Houſhold-ſtuff. I paid him his full price in good Royals, holding the ſame for ever: the Lord onely receiving to himſelf, the yearly Rent of two Royals.

Builds a houſe of his own.

Upon this I built a handſome houſe finely ſeated, both for pleaſure and entertainment; which coſt me three thouſand Ducats. There did I live with that poor trading I had, like a *Fucar*; and might have ended my dayes like a Prince, if bad Fortune, which found me out where-ever I was, had not prevented me.

Guzman turns Merchant, and marries.

There dwelt near unto me ſuch another Merchant as my ſelf, a Jack of all Trades, who propoſed his Daughter to me in Marriage. He was rich; ſhe young, and a perfect beauty: he promiſed me with her three thouſand and five hundred Ducats; and becauſe he ſeemed greatly to affect me, we quickly agreed; the Writings were ſealed, and our Nuptials ſolemnized.

Good counſel to Guzman.

Some few dayes after, being at my Father in Law's houſe at dinner, he told me, (Son) I am now grown old, and have in my life-time paſt through many troubles. Wherefore I will deliver thee my opinion, as one that is much intereſted in thy good.

First

First then, consider, that if thou dost diminish one farthing of thy stock, it will soon be consumed: I shall be always ready to assist and hold you up by the chin, that you may not sink, if it be in my power to bear you up; but if (as God forbid) your expectations should be deceived, take Physick in time, and by a provident forecast, prevent all future sickness.

Guzmans father in Law's plot.

This was but the Introduction to his plot. Afterwards, he brought in two Bills of debt, and two counter-Bills of Credit: and further said, One of these Writings shall be to this effect, that you acknowledge your self indebted to me the sum of four thousand Ducats; and for your security, I will make a counter-Bill, wherein I will confess a full satisfaction and true payment of the said debt. The other Writing shall be, That I will procure my Brother to sell unto you an annual Rent that he hath of five hundred Ducats (*a*) *De Juro*; and when this Bill of Sale shall be made over unto you, you shall return the same unto him again, giving him full power to dispose thereof as he pleaseth. And further, by a Writing under your Hand and Seal, you shall acknowledge, that this was but a pretence, and that really those five hundred Ducats, are, and were alwayes his, and, that you cannot lawfully pretend any interest in them.

(*a*) Juro *is a royal rent due to the Kings of* Spain *for their maintenance.*

Guzmans Father cunning & covetous.

Knowing my Father to be a most subtile and covetous person, and one that had gotten all his wealth by these cheating tricks; I yielded my self to be disposed of as he pleased: for I thought this business could not possibly be any prejudice to me.

Guzmans care.

The foundation being thus laid, I continued very

very circumſpect; my word in all my dealings, was like a Clock, it ſtruck true, and never went falſe.

I was not ignorant, That the credit of thoſe that are great dealers in the world, doth depend much upon oſtentation, fair ſhews and flouriſhes. I made the world believe, that my houſe, my ſelf, and my wife, dwelt in fulneſs of plenty, wanting nothing that was for ornament or neceſſary uſe. *Guzmans rich appearances.*

My wife was extream prodigal, waſting my eſtate without reaſon, in accompanying of her Friends, Banquets, Feaſts, and other entertainments, beſides her exceſſive bravery in Apparel, Jewels, Dreſſing, and a thouſand other Gallantries: this, concurring with my ſmall Trading, in a ſhort time I began to know my own weakneſs. My Father was onely acquainted with my Books of Account, and knew what was due to me, and how much I was indebted to others. *His Wives prodigality.*

And becauſe all men ſuppoſed, that thoſe five hundred Ducats of yearly Revenue were my own, I could not want credit. VVith this prop, I bore the burthen of my debts, till my back was ready to break; and when I could no longer endure the weight, I ſuddenly ſunk, like a building raiſed on a ſandy foundation. I was now ſenſible of my ruine; the very thought whereof did much perplex me. *He in a declining condition.*

I went to my Father in Law's Houſe, to impart my grief to him. He adviſed me not to be diſcontented, for we had a remedy for this diſeaſe in our own hands.

I followed him to the *Eſcrivano de Provincia*;

The publick Notary of the Province; who was his very intimate Friend. We carried him to *Santa Cruz*, a Church adjoyning to the Market-place: there we made in secret unto him, a private relation, how the case stood with us. My Father promised him two hundred Crowns, to finish our business. The *Escrivano* told us, It should be done: but first, said he, Let this Bill of four thousand Ducats, which your Son owes you, be presented; and we will compound with the rest of his Creditors, for ten in the hundred, and perhaps for less. My Father presented his Bond. I was carried to Prison, and all my goods seized upon. My wife, to add fuel to the flame, brought forth the Indenture for her Dowry.

Guzman committed to prison.

His Creditors appear against him.

When my Creditors saw me clapt up, they came all against me, presenting their Bills and Bonds before divers Notaries. But when our Bond was produced, they were forced to yield to that, being the most ancient Debt, and therefore ought to be first satisfied. And the *Alcaldes* seeing it was *Res justificata*, ordered my Father the first payment. My Creditors finding themselves lost this way, tried to imbark my five hundred Ducats of annual Rent, before specified: but the true owner my wifes Uncle, appears, and defends his own right. At last, seeing the Debt desperate, they were willing to come to composition with me. I demanded ten years time; which some of them did willingly grant; provided I gave them good security for the payment according to my own proposition: so I came out of Prison, and enjoyed my liberty; the *Escrivano* being well rewarded by both parties.

They Compound.

Guzman released from prison.

After this storm, I had still a considerable sum of

of other poor mens Money in my hands, being deceived by that credit which I had abroad in the world. This was ſutable to all the reſt of my actions; for this was no better then Theft and plain Robbery: yet I ſtill continued with the name of Merchant, and not of Thief, (which indeed was moſt proper for me:) for never till now did I underſtand the myſtery of this Roguiſh trick, which is doubtleſs no better, then to take a Purſe in the Kings High-way.

CHAP. III.

Guzman *proſecutes the ſucceſs of his marriage till the deceaſe of his Wife, at which time her Dowry returned to her Father.*

THere is more requiſite in Marriage, then two pair of legs in one pair of ſheets.

My wife was ill acquainted, and leſs exerciſed in miſery. She had alwayes lived with her Father, where want and neceſſity were ſtrangers: ſhe was now forced to work; to which being not accuſtomed, it was the more inſufferable for her. *Guzmans wife forced to work.*

With that little which now remained, I began to buy at dear rates upon credit, and ſell cheap for ready money: *Sicut erat in principio.* My Father bought the wares, and I ſtood engaged.

She that ſhould have been my greateſt comfort, proved my greateſt affliction; I mean, my wife; perſecuting me without cauſe, except, for that ſhe had made me poor by her ranting. Now was ſhe come to that height, that, contrary to all *Guzman & his wife at difference.*

truth, ſhe accuſed me for keeping a wench, thinking by this means to finde ſo much favour as to ſue out a Divorce, and procure a ſeparation betwixt us; not wanting a Lawyer to adviſe thereunto: affirming that ſhe might lawfully do it.

This grief, of all other, was the greateſt unto me: for as Matrimony once contracted cannot be diſſolved; ſo when it is ill conjoyned, it is hard to be endured. I had now ſerved ſix years in the Marriage-Galley; in which ſhort time I endured (thanks to my good Wife for it) a great deal of miſery. He is not to be reputed a bad Huſband, who ſecureth his Wifes Dowry, and hath rather encreaſed then diminiſhed it.

The firſt four years we lived in great content and pleaſure: but when the Cloth of Gold Kirtle, which was both richly bordered and imbroidered, was to be ſold for Gold, and not a thread ſo big as a ſpider eſcaped the melting-pot; when I ſaw the water up as high as my chin, and that I could no: ſubſiſt, but muſt ſink, my credit not extending to a farthing-worth of Radiſhes; I found my ſelf in a ſtraight. And adviſing with my Father in Law, I was willing to take ſomewhat a more rigorous courſe with her: which grieved her ſo extreamly, that within a few dayes ſhe died of a ſharp and violent diſeaſe, without any ſigns of penitency, or deſire of receiving the Sacrament.

The death of Guzmans wife.

My Father in Law alwayes loved me, as if I had been his natural Son, correſponding with me againſt his Daughter, my Wife. And when he ſaw his good admonitions would not reclaim her, he would by no means be perſwaded to come within her doors: but after her death, he mourned

mourned for her. We buried this unhappy woman, (for that must be her name) and did all was requisite for her soul.

About a Moneth after, he demanded the Money he had given me for my wifes Portion; which I returned to him with advantage. We levelled our Accounts, and remained in as good friendship as formerly. *Guzman and his Father in Law part.*

CHAP. IV.

Guzman *being a Widower, goes to* Alcala de Henares *to study Divinity: he leaves all, and marries again.*

MY wifes prodigality was sufficient to turn me out of my wealth and credit; but to raise my self to that heighth wherein I was formerly, I had need of the like success I found at *Millaine*, or such an Uncle and Kinsmen as those were in *Genoa*, or that another *Sayavedra* should come and live with me, by whom I might be restored to a better estate then formerly: *Piedra movediza nunca la cubre moho: I was that rolling stone that never gathers Moss.*

A Preacher discoursing of rich men, I remember he told a story not to be forgotten, of a certain Picture, the upper or middle-part of which piece, was taken up by a rich man, there pourtrayed to the life. On his right-hand stood a Roaring Boy, to fight for him; on his left a Fool, to make him merry, both expressed in a fitting posture; under him a Clown; under the *A merry tale delivered in the pulpit by a famous Preacher.*

Clown, a Merchant; under the Merchant, a Councellor; under the Councellor, a Confessor; under the Confessor, a Physician; under the Physician, the Devil, with a long Chain made of Womens Tongues, which ratled horribly. The rich man had written over his head, *These two I keep*; over the Clown, *I maintain these three*; the Merchants Motto was, *I rob these four*; the Councellors Posie, *I pill these five*; the Confessors, *I absolve these six*; the Physician's, *I kill these seven*; and the Devil had a Label coming out of his mouth, which said, *I carry away all these with me to Hell.*

Guzman as poor as Job

I considered with my self, What have I now in my House, to satisfie my hunger? a Brick-bat is too hard to feed upon; nor can I rost one of my Rafters.

He resolves to bee a Clergyman.

I cannot devise any better or more secure remedy for me, then to enter into sacred Orders, and to become a Church-man, applying my self to study Divinity, and to hear the Lectures read in *Alcala de Henares*. Then will I take my Degree; and when I am qualified for the Pulpit, able to say Mass, and preach a Sermon, I shall be sure of somewhat to eat: and in case this should fail, I will turn Friar, and so live a very safe and retired life: for a *Dominus Vobiscum* did never yet taste of hunger.

The time for the payment of my debts was almost expired; and I was certain, if I did not provide for the storm that was now coming, I might in a short time be utterly lost. The Money that I shall get for my House, will maintain me as a Scholar, though I spend yearly one hundred Ducats. I confess this was an ill consultation, and

a worſe reſolution, that I ſhould purpoſe to ſtudy Divinity more for the nouriſhment of my own body, then for the feeding of others ſouls: *Seria malo un lacivo por religioſo? What need a laſcivious wanton to be a Prieſt?* Or, *A* (e) *continent man to marry?* The one is as unfit for the Church, as the other for a Wife.

(e) *Proverb* No hare buen caſado un continente.

I reſolved to be a Clergy-man for no other reaſon, but to repair a broken fortune, to fill my belly, and to be free from my Creditors. I ſold my Houſe for almoſt the price that it coſt me. The Schools at *Alcala* were ſhortly to be opened; and the time approached for the reading of the Lectures. Wherefore I gave my Father in Law power to put out my Money to Uſe; and making me a Cloak and *Sotana*, and providing my ſelf of Bedding and other Neceſſaries fitting for a Students Chamber, I daparted to *Alcala de Henares*.

It did ſomewhat trouble me, to ſubmit to the tuition of a Maſter, who was to command in the Houſe, to ſit at the upper end of the Table, to divide the commons, and give to every man his portion upon his Plate, with his filthy, and perhaps mangie, fingers, dirty nails and long and crooked, as thoſe of an *Oſtriche*, diſtributing the porridge in lettice-leaves, to make it reach the further.

Guzman enters himſelf amongſt the Pupils.

After I had ſtudied the Arts and Metaphyſicks, and obſerved thoſe publick Lectures required of me, I took my Degree, and began to frequent the Divinity-Lectures; where there ſometimes preached a Parſon, that by reaſon of an exceſſive heat in his body, would preach bare-breech'd; and likewiſe on his bench would ſit

A merry tale of a Parſon with a hot conſtitution.

without any thing between his flesh and the board. I (that hated idleness) being thus informed, brought a Turf of an Ants-hill, and laid it on his seat: which the Parson seeing when he came to sit down, was over-joyed, supposing the Sexton had brought him that grass to sit on, he knowing his condition. But, good man, 'twas otherwise; he sits down, and after a-while ariseth to his Prayer, which he had almost ended before their biting disturbed him: who, when they had began, were so violent, that making the Parson forget where he was, quoth he, The Word of God, *&c.* (and making a full stop, scratching his breech) sayes, Good people, *The Word of God is in my Mouth, but I think the Devil is in my Tail.*

Guzman *deserts his study.*

When I was upon my last year, and ready to commence Batchelor of Divinity, my sins carried me one evening to *Santa Maria del Valle*, where are certain Pilgrimages, and places of Devotion: whither we often go, not to give Alms to the poor, or any other pious intention; but quite contrary, to commit a thousand offences against God.

Hence rose the terrible storm of my tempestuous life, the destruction of my wealth, and the overthrow of my credit.

His absurdity at Church. He is in love with a yong Maid.

At my entrance into the Church, I saw a company of women, some of them extream beautiful. I went, as my custome was, to the Font, where the Holy Water was. I dipp'd in my right hand; and that little Water I took out on the tops of my fingers, I sprinkled on my forehead: but having my eyes and thoughts towards the fair herd, not once offering to look on the Altar,

Altar, or the Sacrament; I put forth my Leg, and in ſtead of bleſſing and croſſing my ſelf, I made a hundred love-ſigns.

When I ſaw them go out of the Church, I roſe up and followed them.

They went through a Grove of Aldar-Trees, towards the River ſide; and in a pleaſant Meadow they made the Graſs their Cuſhions, and ſo ſate down, taking out ſome junkets they had brought with them to eat.

This good Company conſiſted of a Widow, a good honeſt Hoſteſs, and her two Daughters, fairer then *Caſtor* and *Pollux*, with ſome other of their Friends and Acquaintance. Theſe did but ſerve as foyls to ſet off the luſtre and beauty of my Hoſteſſes eldeſt Daughter, whoſe name was *Grace*.

I was generally well known in *Alcala*, having reſided there above ſeven years; and was accounted one of the beſt Students in the Univerſity: and, which was a greater addition to my credit, I was held to be very rich: Attributes that have power to perſwade the hardeſt hearts to love. *Guzman a good ſcholar*

As they were beginning their (*a*) *Merendar*, I inſinuated my ſelf into their company; wherein I could not be ſo crafty, as they were ſubtile. (*a*) *Or, repaſt between Meals.*

When we had done eating, a Maid-ſervant took out a Viol which ſhe had brought under her Mantle; and *Grace* preſenting the inſtrument to me, requeſted to hear me play, becauſe they were diſpoſed to dance; which they did excellently well: and my new Love ſo much exceeded them, that I was now more enflamed then before. *He gets acquaintance with the Maid.*

When

When they were weary, and ſate down to reſt themſelves, I delivered the Viol into her hands from whom I received it; beſeeching her to grace that inſtrument with a ſong: which ſhe did, without any nicety or coyneſs; performing both ſo ſweetly, that ſhe ſeemed to have arreſted Time; ſo rarely did her Voice accord with the Viol.

Her education good.

To my grief, the Sun had almoſt declined; and now we prepare to walk home: and I was ſo happy as to lead my Miſtriſs by the hand, feigning to walk more at eaſe. We let the reſt of the Company paſs before us.

I conducted her to her Houſe; from whence her Mother would not ſuffer me to depart, till I had been in her private Chamber: There ſhe feaſted me with a Collation of Sweet-meats.

Afterwards I took leave; and deſiring that I might again enjoy the like favours from them, went to the Colledge.

Guzman love-ſick.

That night my ſleep was ſhort, my thoughts confuſed, and my minde diſcontented.

I was now in Loves ſtrongeſt Priſon, it being left to my choyce, whether I would marry her, or not.

He marries again.

Her Mother offred me her Houſe, and the uſe of all that was in it. She was extream kinde, and ready upon all occaſions to ſerve me. Wherefore I left all other means of advancing my ſelf, eſteeming this the beſt.

In my youth I carried a Basket; and now at riper years, my Manſion was an Inne or common Victualling-houſe; and I wiſh to God that my troubles might here end.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

He leaves the University, and carries his wife with him to Madrid, *from whence they were both baniſhed.*

I Leap'd from Batchelor of Divinity, into the Degree of a Maſter of prophane Love, and became a Licenciate.

In this my ſecond Marriage, I took ſo much content and pleaſure, that I perſwaded my ſelf, *Que nunca por mi ſe commençara el tocino del parayſo: That I ſhould never fall from this felicity, but alwayes continue the moſt happy man in the world.* Proverb.

But I would not conſult with *Underſtanding*; I put *Reaſon* away from me, nor would believe *Truth*, that told me, It was her Beauty, and not Devotion, that I intended in this action; and, that marrying with a fair woman, many cares muſt of neceſſity be offered to me, for fear ſhe ſhould prove common. For the preſent, I lived very pleaſantly; and, (*a*) *He that is not bleſs'd with a Mother in Law, is ignorant what a bleſſing he wants.*

(*a*) *Proverb* Losque no gozen de ſuedro, no gazan de coſa buena

She uſed me as if I had been her own natural Son: and, as my wife brought me but a ſmall Portion, ſo ſhe had the leſs cauſe to put me to ſuperfluous expences; but being young and flexible, I rul'd as I thought fit.

My Kindred eſteemed themſelves much honoured by my perſon, becauſe they knew I was every

every way ſuperior unto them: for he that ſhall be linked in Alliance with thoſe that are of greater Rank and Quality then himſelf, ſhall never want Lords to ſerve, Judges to fear, and Princes to whom he muſt pay perpetual tribute.

Guzmans happineſs. But my Mother in Law was tributary unto me, my Siſter in Law was my ſlave, my Spouſe did adore me, and all the Houſe was ſubject to my commands.

In all my life I never was ſo free and exempt from the cares and troubles of the world. I minded nothing but eating, drinking and ſleeping; not liable to any payment to the value of one *Maravede*, either for Houſe-Rent, or to the King.

That which grieves us moſt in our temporal loſſes, is the remembrance that we did poſſeſs them: ſo that the more (in injoying them) is our happineſs, the more ſenſible in loſing them is our miſery.

His miſerable eſtate. My Father in Law being dead, his Creditors came upon my Mother with an Execution, by vertue whereof, they ſeized and carried away with them all that they found in the Houſe. I was afraid, that accounting my ſelf and my wife as part of the Houſhold-goods, they would have taken us away likewiſe. They did little better; for by violence they thruſt us out of doors, that we might not hinder them from diſpoſing of the Goods.

The Creditors for their benefit, expoſed the Inne to thoſe that would give moſt yearly Rent for it. *Quien de tu officio eſſe, es tu enemigo: There is no man ſo great an enemy to thee, as he that is of thy own Trade and Profeſſion.*

Proverb.

This

This Inne was formerly in very good credit; ſo that they went out-vying one another, (every one ſtriving to have it) ſtill out-bidding my Mother, who deſired to Rent it of them, becauſe ſhe and her Daughters had been there bred up; which conſideration made her offer more then it was worth. In concluſion, we had poſſeſſion again of the Houſe; but ſo inhanced in the Rent, (thanks to others malice) that we were ſcarce able to buy our ſelves bread and pilchards; for the Rent, like a Spunge, did ſuck up all our gains, whileſt we were ready to periſh for want of food.

Guzman ſtudies Phyſick.

I purpoſed to try what profit would acrew to me by my Learning, I applied my ſelf to the ſtudy of Phyſick; my encouragement ariſing from thoſe good Grounds which I had from the Metaphyſicks; it being an uſual ſaying with us, That, *Ubi deſinet Philoſophus, ibi incipit Medicus; & ubi Medicus, ibi Theologus: Where the Philoſopher ends, there the Phyſician begins; and where the Phyſician, there the Divine.* But being deceived in this alſo, I reſolved not to ſell my honour to Scholars, of whom nothing is to be gotten but half-peny-loaves and hat-bands.

No pude ſer el corvo mas negro que las alas: The Crow cannot be blacker then his wings: Nor could my condition be much worſe, then now it is; wherefore I made up all that little that I had into one Fardle, all which a man might have in a manner put into a Snails ſhell, for one little old worm-eaten Cheſt contained all the Houſhold-ſtuff I had: which being put into a Cart, my wife and I ſitting thereupon, we marched to *Madrid*; where, as ſoon as we arrived, her beauty

beauty muſtered together a great number of Voluntaries, that offered their ſervice unto her, and were willing to hazard their Lives and Fortunes for her ſake. But he, who was moſt forward to accommodate us at that time, was a Broker in the High-ſtreet, who brought us to a Friends houſe of his, where we were kindely entertained: and becauſe we could not on a ſudden make proviſion of ſuch things as were needful for us; He ſent us in good ſtore of Meat ready dreſt, by one that kept a Cooks ſhop; and in the evening came himſelf to viſit us. After ſome Complements, I asked him, How much he had disburſed for us? But he ſeeming to make light of it, told me, It was a trifle not worth naming; aſſuring me, that he was ready to ſerve me in things of more value, whenſoever I had occaſion. At laſt, with my importunity, he told me it came to eight Royals; which I preſently paid him: and throwing my Cloak on my ſhoulders, I went into the City, leaving him to converſe with my Wife.

Guzman & his wife much obliged to a Broker in Madrid.

At my return, I found a ſtately Supper provided for us: I was not inquiſitive to know from whence it came, becauſe my Hoſteſs told me, That we were that night to be her Gueſts; as alſo the honeſt Broker: and from that Suppers acquaintance, we became very intimate Friends.

(*b*) *In Spain they uſe at their Comedies, to entertain the women with rich wines cool'd in ſnow, & Sweet-meats.*

He would come to my Lodging, and often invited us to ſup in his Garden of Pleaſure; ſometimes he would carry us to ſee a Comedy, and there beſtow upon us a (*b*) Collation.

Notwithſtanding all this honeſt Brokers endeavors, I was not ſatisfied: for it was not neceſſary

ceſſary Food and Raiment that would content me. I coveted to live like a King, to be courted with extraordinary obſervance; and that they ſhould buy with Gold, the ſweet converſation they were to enjoy, and the liberty I gave them by going forth my ſelf, that they might have the freer acceſs.

I had now found out one that did far ſurpaſs him both in wealth and merit. I was much troubled, becauſe I knew not now to let this Gentleman know my readineſs to embrace his friendſhip; although I was informed, that he deſired nothing more, then to be acquainted with my wife.

I was unwilling to leave the Broker, for this uncertain Gentleman: For, *Mejores pan duro que ninguno: Stale bread is better then none.* I was careful to avoid all diſaſters, eſpecially, that might happen in my own houſe: and to prevent all diſorder, I reſolved that theſe two ſhould not tread in one path: knowing by experience, That, *No ſufre dos cabezas ungovierno: One Kingdome would not admit of two Heads:* (a) Nor, *Two diſferent Birds build in one Neſt.* Till at laſt being certain that my Gallant was in the Net, I told the Broker, I would no longer pay rent for Lodgings, being able to keep Houſe. So the ſiege was raiſed, and I began to ſet up Shop wholly for my ſelf.

(a) *Proverb No ſe anidam bien dos paxaros juntos en un augujero*

With this I entred into a very ſtrict league of friendſhip.

He invited me often to his Houſe, and would, when I was gone home, ſend me ſeveral curious diſhes of meat; giving ſecret order to his ſervants, to leave the diſhes with me, though they were all of Silver,

It

It pleaſed me very well, to ſee my wife at her return from ſome amorous Gallant, to come home laden with Gold and Jewels.

And it grieved me, when I walked the ſtreets in my bravery, with a Jewel in my Hat, and Hat-band garniſh'd with Stones of good value, to hear my Neighbors ſay, *Sennor Guzman* hath in his Hat one *Cornix* doth out-ſhine all the reſt. But perhaps ſome of theſe did envy my good Fortune, and like Goats, did not ſee their own horns, though they were viſible to all the world beſides.

Guzmans riches. The Goods in my Houſe did daily encreaſe, like Froath by the Sea-ſide. I had both Winter and Summer-Hangings, pieces of Arras wrought in *Bruxels*, others of branched Damask, interwoven with Tenſel; Beds of Damask, Canopies and Quilts of the ſame; Turkey Carpets to tread upon, Pillows and Cuſhions for my Wives *Eſtrado*, when ſhe was pleaſed to ſit in State. Silver Diſhes did run upon wheels about my Houſe. My Trunks would not contain my Wardrobe and rich imbroideries of Cloth of Gold and Silks. My Cabinets were filled with Jewels and Precious Stones. I never wanted Money to Game, but triumphed in plenty.

Guzman baniſhed from Madrid. A ſevere Miniſter of State was informed of our wicked courſes: and after my examination, many witneſſes appearing againſt me, I and my wife were both baniſhed from *Madrid*, as the corrupters of youth, and publick profeſſors of vice.

And now was the tenth year expired, wherein I was to give ſatisfaction to my Creditors. Where-

Wherefore I hired a Coach for our own perſons, and two Carts to carry our Goods and People; intending to go to *Sevil*, becauſe I thought thoſe that came from *Perv*, fluſh with their Gold and Silver, would be more beneficial to us, then the Courtiers in *Madrid*.

CHAP. VI.

Guzman *arrives at* Sevil; *his wife goes away with a Captain of a Galley into* Italy; *and he proſecutes his former trade of ſtealing.*

WE travelled to *Sevil*, *Al paſſo del buey: With the foot of an Ox*: for my Wife was fearful the jogging of the Coach ſhould make her a little Dog-ſick. Indeed one of theſe is a great piece of Ladies eſſence, and the proper paſſion of a Gentlewoman: nor can they be more without them, then a Barber without a Gittern, or a Spaniſh *Don* without a Tooth-picker.

I remembred my firſt departure from *Sevil*, and the Church of Saint *Lazaro*. I ſaw the Stone whereon I ſlept in the Church-porch; the ſteps by which I paſſed to the holy Chappel, where I ſo devoutly prayed: and though I was at diſtance from it, I thus ſaluted the Patron thereof: *O glorious Saint, when I took my leave of thee, I went away with tears, on foot, without company, and a childe. Now I return to ſee thee, rich, attended, and a married man.*

I expected to have found all things as I left them; but they were ſo far from being in *ſtate*

que prius, that there was not any ſhadow or memorial thereof remaining; nor was I was yet certain, that this was the ſame *Sevil*.

The next day I hired a houſe in the *Barrios* of Saint *Bartholomew*, paying my Rent before-hand; thither I carried all my Goods.

My wife importuned me to give her leave to ſee this famous City: and to humour her, I went to the (*b*) *Gradas*, and procured her a Squire to attend and ſhew her the moſt remarkable places in the City. And although there were not ſo numerous a company of Princes, Dukes, Marqueſſes, Condes, and other *Titulado's* in it, as in *Madrid*; yet was ſhe well pleaſed with the ſituation thereof, and very willing to reſide and continue here.

(*a*) Gradas de Sevilla, *a place like our Royal Exchange in London.*

With great diligence and trouble I found my Mother: I was very importunate to have her abide with me; but ſhe would not a long time conſent to it; ſaying, *Que dos tocas en un fuego, nunca encienden lumbre à derechas: That two white Kerchiefs in one Kitchin, did never yet make a good fire*; and, *The Daughter in Law, did ſeldome correſpond with the Mother in Law.* But in the end I prevailed with her, alledging, That I deſired nothing more, then that ſhe might live at reſt in her old age.

Proverb.

Guzman findes his Mother, & perſwades her to live with him.

I ſaw in her the ruines of time, and how years conſume all things: when I parted from her, ſhe was young and beautiful; now I found her lean, tawny, toothleſs, her face like an old Apple-*John*, ſhrivell'd, and full of wrinkles. This made me ſay to my wife, Thy Youth and Beauties are not perpetual; and if thou doſt eſcape that deformity which age layeth upon thee, yet muſt thou

ſubmit

ſubmit to the power of Death, which diſfigureth the greateſt perfections.

My Mother having advantage of many years experience, adviſed my wife not to admit into her company the yong Men of that ſtreet wherein ſhe dwelt; but (like the Fox) go further off for her prey, becauſe of the infamy and diſhonor that ſhe ſhould certainly merit thereby. Concerning the Court-Pages, Students in Law, and Univerſity-Scholars, ſhe read the like Lecture; telling her, That they reſembled Rooks and Crows, that would ſmell out fleſh at a great diſtance; but were good for nothing but to peck at it and be gone. *The good counſel of Guzmans Mother to his wife.*

She wiſhed to ſhut her Doors againſt all married Men: for ſhe could not have a more implacable Enemy, then a jealous woman.

Beardleſs young Gallants, and Sattin-cheek'd Boyes, ſhe counſelled her by no means to entertain; for theſe conceited, that their ſtrong perfumes and curled locks might deſerve any favour from her.

My wife became ſick, and weary of the Mother in Law, being ſomewhat reſtrained of her liberty, and not ſo abſolute Miſtreſs of her own will as formerly. Wherefore cruel ſtorms and tempeſts did often ariſe betwixt them: and becauſe I would not be their ſtickler, when I ſaw the *Dolphins* play above water, I conſtantly went abroad, to preſerve my ſenſe of hearing, which I might have loſt, if I ſtaid to hear the noiſe and thunderings they made.

My loving Spouſe, becauſe I did not take her part againſt my Mother, began to hate me perfectly; and meeting with a Friend of hers,

who was Captain of one of the *Neapolitan* Galleys, that lay in the Road, ſhe exchanged my love for his, carrying away with her all my Gold, Silver, and Jewels into *Italy*.

I have often heard, That he is either a Madman or a Fool, that will ſeek after his wife when ſhe is once gone from him. And, *Al Enemigo hazer la puente de plata por donde huyeſſe: That a man ſhould make a golden Bridge for a flying Enemy, and rejoyce at his departure:* beſides I conſidered, That, *Mejor ſolo que mal accompannado: I ſhould be better alone, then evil accompanied.*

Proverb.

She left me extream poor; and having ſold and ſpent all my Houſhold-ſtuff, I was forced to begin my old Trade.

Guzman ſteals Cloaks by night.

At night I went into thoſe ſtreets, in which were divers turnings and croſs-wayes; and ſometimes returned home laden with three or four Cloaks; and quickly altering the propriety of theſe, that I might not be diſcovered, I ſold them for ready Money.

My Mother was much diſcontented, that I ſhould follow theſe wicked courſes. Such, as ſhe often told me, would bring me to the Gallowes. Wherefore ſhe and a young Wench (with whom ſhe lived formerly) agreed to become Partners, and equally to ſhare all their gains.

He picks a Gentlemans pocket.

Upon the Feaſt of *San Auguſtine*, I perceived a Gentleman coming out of his houſe with good ſtore of Money looſe in his left Pocket, on that ſide where his Rapier hung. I followed him, till coming into a place where there was a great preaſs of people, thruſting and crowding one another, I gently lifted up his

his Hanger, and nimbly dived to the bottom of his Pocket, letting not one Royal eſcape my fingers. But the unquiet motion of thoſe that were about me, hindred my hand, being full, to carry it away neatly; by means whereof, ſome part thereof fell upon the Stone-Pavement of the Cloyſter, making a great noiſe: wherefore I threw all down, and taking out my Handkerchief, I cryed to the people, to ſtand back and make room, becauſe in drawing out my Handkerchief, I had ſcattered all my Money. All very kindely did as I deſired them; and the honeſt Gentleman whom I had thus robb'd, charitably ſtooped down to aſſiſt me, till I had all to the laſt Royal. I gave him thanks for his pains; and poſting out of the throng, went home well contented.

CHAP. VII.

Guzman *being preferred to a Gentlewomans ſervice, robs her; is apprehended, and condemned to the Galleys during life.*

WHen I purpoſed to do any notable Villany, I put on a large Jeſuitical Cloak, a broad-verged Hat, a little Band, and a little pair of Breeches, together with all the geſtures of outward Sanctity, Submiſſion, Mortification, and good Example; having the true turning up the white of my Eye, a ſober Aſpect, and a grave Utterance.

By my hypocriſie, I inſinuated my ſelf into the good opinion of a moſt Religious Friar, who placed me with a Gentlewoman whoſe Husband was in the *Indies*; where I was, upon his commendation of me, received into her ſervice, and truſted with all her Wealth and Family; the honeſt Friar being Surety for my fidelity.

Guzman received into ſervice.

She provided me a fair Lodging, and a delicate ſoft Bed, and all other neceſſaries that were fitting for me; uſing me in all things, not as a Servant, but as a Kinſman.

Sometimes ſhe would intreat me to ſay an *Ave-Mary*, for the health and good ſucceſs of her Husband. I anſwered all her demands, as if I had been an Oracle; and with ſo much Mortification, that I often cauſed her to weep. By this means I came to rob her, and diſhonor her houſe.

She had in her houſe a fair white Slave, with whom in a ſhort time I was too familiar. To all the reſt of the Servants ſhe ſeemed a Saint; but to me ſhe ſhewed her ſelf moſt lewd and diſſolute, as if ſhe had been educated in the publick Stews: yet did ſhe deport her ſelf with ſo much wiſdome and diſcretion, that none in the houſe could perceive any intimacy betwixt us. This Slave I promiſed to redeem, and marry; which made her, like a Spaniel, wait upon me diligently. She furniſhed me with ſo many Sweet-meats, that my Chamber was like a Confectioners-ſhop; my Cheſt was never without Collations, curious Linen, and ſome ſtore of Crowns.

My Miſtreſs knew nothing concerning her own

own Eſtate and Wealth; nor had any other Money, but what ſhe received of me. All her Rents in the City were in my power. I had likewiſe the command of all her Flocks in the Country, and did take and gather all the fruits and profits thereof.

My deſign being, when I had a conſiderable ſum in my hands, to depart.

I deſired much to go to the *Indies*, and did but want opportunity to imbark my ſelf.

But my Miſtreſs had timely notice of her certain ruine, by her Farmers and Tenants, who informed her they had paid in their Rents to me: The Shepherds, That I had ſold her Flocks: The Bailiff of her Vineyards, That I had conveyed all her Wines out of the Vaults and Cellars where they uſed to be kept: and becauſe that of all this, I had not brought in to her one peny, either in Money or Account, ſhe communicated the buſineſs to a Kinſman of hers, who promiſed to uſe his beſt intereſt to make me produce a better account of that part of her Eſtate, which was in my hands.

The next morning, as I lay in my Bed, an *Alguazil* came in, commanding me to put on my Clothes, and go with him to Priſon. I asked him at whoſe Suit he arreſted me. His anſwer was, I ſhould know hereafter. *Guzman arreſted & carried to Priſon.*

I went with him, very ſad and penſive, ſuppoſing, that I was committed by Vertue of ſome *Requiſitoria*, or Commiſſion out of *Italy*; or that my Creditors in *Caſtile* had found me out, and all my late Theſts in this City were now upon Record.

My Mother living ſo privately and retired, at

ſeveral times I carried thither all that I had ſtollen from my Miſtreſs.

When the Officers broke open my Cheſt, they found nothing, but a Bill of the laſt year, and a few old rags.

She ſent a Friend of hers to viſit me in Priſon, and compound the buſineſs; promiſing, that if I would return into her h nds what I had purloined, ſhe would immediately ſet me at liberty: but I was deaf to all her intreaty, though it were for my own benefit.

The honeſt Friar hearing of my misfortune, came to adviſe me, that if I were guilty of the Theft, I ſhould take ſome ſpeedy courſe to make ſatisfaction, that my Reputation might not be utterly loſt. I ſtoutly denied all; affirming, That I was innocent; and, That they had ſuborned falſe witneſſes againſt me.

From me, he went to the *Eſcrivano*'s Office, to *Abonar* and defend my Cauſe, deſiring him for Charity's ſake to have an eſpecial care of it, becauſe he was perſwaded I was a moſt upright and religious man. The *Eſcrivano* laugh'd heartily at the Friars commendation of me; ſhewing him ſeveral *Proceſſes* againſt me, containing a particular Relation of all the Thefts and cheating Tricks I had uſed. The holy man was aſhamed to ſollicite my Cauſe any more; and afterwards became my mortal enemy, becauſe I had abuſed his favours. He made a full relation hereof to the *Teniente* or Deputy-Lieutenant, who was ſo incenſed againſt me, that he commanded the Jaylor to load me with irons, and put me into the Dungeon.

I was at the firſt well uſed (for my Cauſe was not

not Criminal) and handſomely lodged. When I was but entred the Priſon doors, there preſently flock'd about me 20 ſeveral Proctors, Atturneys, and Sollicitors, who lived by the ſins of the people. Theſe ſet down my Name, and the Cauſe of my impriſonment: all of them making it a matter of nothing, and an eaſie ſuit to end. One of them told me, The Judge was his very good Friend, and favoured all the Cauſes he brought before him. Another ſaid, That he had a great intereſt in the publick Notary. A third, That within two hours he would procure me Bail. The fourth, That my Charge was a thing of no conſideration; and, that for ſix Royals he would inſtantly ingage to free me. One of theſe I elected to be my Sollicitor, giving him in his hand ten Royals; which he no ſooner received, but vaniſhed from me, and never appeared more to do me the leaſt ſervice for my Money.

The knaveries of Proctors, Attorneys and Sollicitors.

Upon my ſecond examination I was found guilty; and the Jaylor at my return, called me up to clap irons on my legs: but I redeem'd theſe with five Royals.

The Wench with whom I was formerly very familiar, ſent me daily Money, Linen, and whatſoever I writ for.

My Mother hearing upon what terms my Suit depended in Court, reſolved to part with nothing I had brought to her; ſending me a Letter which ſignified that ſhe was robb'd of all her own wealth, and likewiſe that which I had left in her poſſeſſion.

At the Grand Seſſions I was ſentenced by the Judge, to ride upon an Aſs with my face towards his Tail, round the City; to be ſtript to the waſte,

Guzman ſentenced to be whipt.

waſte, and receive one hundred and fifty ſtripes; the Cryer proclaiming my Offence before me: and this done, to remain in the Kings Galleys ſix years.

Although I was much grieved at the Judges ſevere ſentence; yet was it ſome comfort to me, that my Friend *Soto* was condemned to the like puniſhment: and, that we ſhould, like loving Curs, be faſtned together in one Chain. And now deſpairing of Redemption, I feigned my ſelf ſick for fifteen dayes, without coming either out of the Dungeon, or my Bed.

Guzmans tries to break priſon and is prevented.

In the mean ſpace, I provided my ſelf of Womens Apparel; and ſhaving my Beard, I clothed my ſelf with it; and caſting a Mantle over me, I paſt with this diſguiſe, through the two Doors that belonged to the Galleries, without being diſcovered by either of the Porters; and deſcending to the Door that opened to the ſtreet, a Porter which had but one Eye (would to God the other had been out) looking in my Face, knew me, and turned me up ſtairs. I was preſently ſearched, and found to have about me a Sword, Dagger, and two Piſtols; which aggravated my Offence, and made my Accuſation Criminal.

He is condemned to the Galleys during life.

Report of this Adventure was made to the Judge; who fulminating a new *Proceſs* againſt me, they condemned me to the Galleys during life.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Guzman is taken out of the Priſon of Sevil, *and carried to the Port to be put into the Galleys; he relateth the ſucceſs of his journey.*

THe next day we were aſſembled together, and chained with four ſtrong Chains, to each other; every one of us receiving a teſtimonial of his Sentence: and being thus prepared, we were delivered into the cuſtody of the Commiſſary, to be conveyed by eaſie Journeys to the Sea-ſide.

In this equipage we went out of *Sevil*, to the great grief of our Parents, who accompanied us out of the Gates, tearing their hair, and expreſſing a thouſand ſigns of ſorrow. I was *Solus cum ſolo, Left alone without any Friend*; for my Mother came not to take her leave of me, and give me her bleſſing: which added much to the load of my misfortune.

Early the next morning, going to a place called *Las Cabecas*, we ſaw coming towards *Sevil* a poor fellow driving a great herd of young Pigs; and paſſing the word from one to another, we preſently put our ſelves in the form of a half-Moon, and ſo incompaſſed the Drove, that by force every one of us made free purchaſe of a fat Pig. The Clown entreated the Commiſſary to command us to reſtore them again: but he expecting a part of the Prize, ſuffered us quietly to enjoy them; leaving the poor man to ſeek ſome

The ſlaves rob a poor Country-man of his Pigs.

ſome other remedy for his Goods. At noon, when we came to our Inne, the Commiſſary called to us for his ſhare of the Theft: And there was a great tumult amongſt us, who ſhould part with his Pig to the Commiſſary. I thought that in the carriage of this buſineſs, he might juſtly blame me more then the reſt, becauſe my Underſtanding did exceed theirs. Wherefore I ſaid to him, (Sir) If it pleaſe you, ſeeing there is a ſtrong guard upon us, to command me to be unchained, I will dreſs for you my own Pig; for I have ſtill remaining ſome reliques of a good Cook. He thankfully accepted of my civil offer, and cauſed my Chain to be knockt off; ſetting a Guard of two Souldiers over me, to prevent my eſcape.

At the ſame time, three Travellers came in to refreſh themſelves: The Commiſſary kindely ſaluting them, entreated them to dine with him. One of them taking off his Port-mantua from his Mule, brought it in; and ſitting down with the reſt, he placed it betwixt his Legs under the Table: he laid by him likewiſe his *Alforias*, wherein he had a Cheeſe and a Bottle of Wine, and a Gammon of Bacon; but he ſeemed to be moſt careful of his Port-mantua. I called to my Hoſteſs for a Knife, which I hid in the ſleeve of my Doublet; and putting a Jar of water under the Table, and in it a Bottle of wine, that the Commiſſary might have it freſh, and cool: As often as I ſtooped to fill him a Glaſs of wine, by degrees I unbuttoned the Port-mantua: and finding a fair opportunity, I cut a great ſlaſh in it, and took out two ſmall (but weighty) bundles, which I conveyed into my

Guzman robs a Traveller.

my (*a*) Galley-ſlops; buttoning the cover thereof over the cut, that it could not be diſcerned. (*a*) *Or large Breeches.*

After Dinner, the Travellers departed, and we were commanded to prepare to march: and before they brought me to my Chain, I went to my friend *Soto*, and gave him my prize to ſecure for me. He received it with much joy; and killing his Pig, he thruſt both the parcels into the belly of it, placing the intrails before the mouth of the wound, that they might not be perceived.

VVhen I was going to be made faſt, I entreated the Commiſſary to do me the favour, that I might be filed next to *Soto*. He willingly granted my requeſt, cauſing the other to be chained in my place.

As we went, I asked *Soto* how he had diſpoſed of thoſe bundles I delivered him. He ſeemed to look ſtrangely upon me, as if he had never received any ſuch things of me: which made me ſuppoſe that he was drunk, and ſo did not at preſent remember them. I urged him to return them to me, telling him the place where I gave them to him. But he proteſted he knew not of what I ſpoke: asking me if I were mad to requeſt that of him, which I never delivered. *Soto cheats Guzman.*

I cannot expreſs my own trouble, to be thus unhandſomely dealt with, by one, to whom I had done ſo many good offices.

He perſevered ſtill with many Oathes, Blaſphemies and Curſes, to affirm that he was innocent in what I charged him with: inſomuch that the Commiſſary hearing him, corrected him with his whip. He deſired to know the cauſe of our contention. I acquainted him with the whole

whole buſineſs; whoſe covetous nature I knew deſired nothing more, then to poſſeſs what we fought for. He commanded *Soto* to give him that he received of me. He ſtourly denies the receit of any ſuch thing. The Guards ſearch him; but finde not the leaſt mark or ſign of them.

When the Commiſſary ſaw, that neither perſwaſions nor threatnings would move him to confeſs the truth, he commanded he ſhould be put upon the Rack. *Soto's* fleſh was too delicate and tender, to endure ſo great torture; which made him preſently acknowledge whither he had conveyed them. They took his Pig from him; and looking in the belly thereof, found the two bundles, in both which was a *Roſario*, or ſet of Beads, of the pureſt Coral that ever I ſaw; each Bead having its Cap of Gold, and ſet out with curious enamelling.

Theſe the Commiſſary put into his pocket, promiſing to give me what in reaſon I could demand for them.

Soto was ſo inraged, that they were forced to ſeparate us; and afterwards to put iron handcuffs upon his hands, becauſe he was continually throwing ſtones at me.

We came to the Galleys at the very time when they were calking and rigging, and making all ready to go to Sea. The Commiſſary received from the Kings *Alguazil*, a Diſcharge for the delivery of ſo many Slaves. And afterwards went away, without taking any notice of me, or giving me that ſatisfaction for my Beads, he promiſed before ſo many Witneſſes.

We were guarded to the Galley, by certain Mooriſh

Mooriſh Slaves with half-Pikes, tying our hands with leather thongs they had for that purpoſe: being on board, we were commanded to retire to the Poop, till the Captain and Pilot did call us by our Names, and place us in our ſeveral Banks. I was allotted to the ſecond Bank, oppoſite to the Cook-room, and near to the Pilots Cabbin. And *Soto* (thanks to my ſins that brought this puniſhment upon me) was placed in the *Patron*, or Maſters Bank: I wiſh he had been at a greater diſtance from me.

They inſtalled me in my Seat, and put on the King's Robes upon me; two ſhirts, two pair of Linen Breeches, a coloured Waſte-coat, and a red Cap.

I was ſcarce warm in my ſeat, when a baſe under-Barber with his Razor, made my Head and Beard as bare as my hand. This did ſomewhat trouble me, becauſe I eſteemed both as a great Ornament; few men in *Spain* having a better head of Hair, then mine.

I comforted my ſelf with this conſideration, That thoſe who had lived far better then I, were fallen into far greater miſeries. And although it be moſt certain, that there is not any life ſo miſerable as that of a Galley-ſlave, yet was it not half ſo bad as that which I endured with my firſt wife.

A young man that ſerved the *Alguazil*, came and put Fetters upon my Feet, and Manacles on my hands; chaining the reſt of our Bank ſo faſt, that it was impoſſible they ſhould ſtir: they gave me my allowance, which was twenty ſix Ounces of Biſket. It was *Dia de Caldiro*: *The Caldron-*

Caldron-day, for the boiling of Fleſh; and being unprovided of a wooden-diſh, I was cheated of my ſhare of Beef: nor had I experience enough to ſoak my Bisket in the Broath, but eat it dry, as all freſh-men do at firſt, till time teach them the uſe of their Arms.

Our labour at preſent was not much: for whileſt they were rigging and calking of the Galleys, we onely ſerved to row towards the ſhore when we were commanded, and to provide Boughs to defend the Tallow from the heat of the Sun.

And becauſe I already found, that I wanted an Angel to guard and attend me, I elected the Pilot to be my Protector; and the rather, becauſe the Captain had given him Authority over us, diſdaining to trouble himſelf with the Slaves.

Guzman inſinuates himſelf into the Pilots favour.

The Pilots Cabin adjoyning to my Bank, by that means in a ſhort time by degrees, I ſcrewed my ſelf into his favour. I made his Bed, bruſh'd his Clothes, waſh'd his Linen, and was in every reſpect ſo diligent about him, that he preſently ordered, to have me removed from my Bank, to wait upon his perſon.

The exerciſes of the Galley-ſlaves.

There did I learn to knit Stockings, to make Buttons both of Silk and Hair, as likewiſe falſe Dice, and Tooth-pickers, of ſundry inventions and colours, neatly gilded; wherein my ſelf excelled above all the other Slaves.

We were enforced to go with our Galley to *Cadiz*, to furniſh our ſelves with Maſts, Yards, Sails, Pitch, Tar, Tallow, and other neceſſaries.

This was the firſt time that I proved the hard

hard labour of a Galley-slave: for when we anchored, I was so weary and drowzie, that I went to sleep before the Pilot my Master.

Opportunity makes the Thief. When my Comrades perceived me to be so fast, two of them combined together to rob me of my Money, which I had strongly sewed to my shirt. They did it with much facility; and doubtless I had never recovered it, if the *Alcalde* had not been my Friend. *Guzman robb'd by the galley-slaves.*

The next morning, whilest my Master was dressing himself, I related my misfortune to him.

Upon this information, he caused the *Alguazils* Servant to give to every one of the six adjoyning Banks, fifty blows with a Ropes-end, examining them if they had seen or heard of this stoln Money. After this punishment, to make their pains compleat, they were wash'd with salt and vineger.

There was a Moor, who when his turn came to be beaten, confessed, That he had seen his Companion the night before, go from his own Bank to mine; but wherefore, he knew not. The accused party pretended that he was intangled in that Chain which belonged to my Bank; and, that he came thither to free himself.

But the Pilot being not satisfied with this excuse, he himself gave him above two hundred stripes with the hoop of a Hogshead.

At last he confessed, that he had stoln it, though it were not now in his possession: having given it to a Slave of another Bank to keep for him.

He was afterwards laſh'd for his offence: and my Money was returned to me, which I gladly received from my Maſters hand.

CHAP. IX.

Guzman *proſecutes that which happened to him in the Galley; and, by what means he purchaſed his freedom.*

A Gentleman in our Galley, who was the Captains Kinſman, had loſt eighteen links of a great Gold Chain he wore about his Neck, which were worth fifty Crowns: nor was it ever known who had them, although all his own and the Captains Servants were put to the laſh.

To prevent the like misfortune, the Captain adviſed his Couſin to commit his Apparel and Jewels to the charge of ſome truſty Galley-ſlave; aſſuring them, That whatſoever he ſhould deliver to their cuſtodies, they durſt as well be hang'd as not give him a good account of it.

The Gentleman took his counſel: and upon inquiry who was the fitteſt man for his purpoſe, I was recommended to him for the moſt ſufficient. He deſired the Pilot to conſent that I might be his Servant: which he could not deny, although he was unwilling to part with me.

I was no ſooner come into the Poop, but he requeſted the Captain, that I might walk about with

with one onely Fetter upon my Leg; becauſe he profeſſed it grieved him to ſee a man of my parts and abilities, like a Monkey thus tied to a Chain. His ſuit was granted: by which means I was enabled to ſerve him with more nimbleneſs and diſpatch. I had an inventory delivered to me of all his Apparel and Jewels, whereof I always gave him a very good account. *Guzman ſerves the Captains Kinſman.*

VVe were both of us jealous of his own Servants, who, becauſe I had the charge of his *Recamera*, his wardrobe, and whatſoever appertained to him, might eaſily excuſe themſelves of ſuch things as they ſhould ſteal from me.

I was by this ſervice in a ſtate of obliging others unto me, performing many kindneſſes to ſuch Slaves as were my Friends and Acquaintance.

Soto envying my good fortune, diſgraced me as much as was in his power; telling ſome things truly of me, and inventing others: omitting nothing that might manifeſt his malice and my ſhame.

And although I knew him to be the Knife that ſought to cut my throat, yet was I never heard to exclaim againſt him for his daily abuſing me.

This *Soto* was very intimate with my Maſters Page, and promiſed him a pair of fine Stockings of his own knitting, if, as he waited at Table, he could handſomely ſteal ſome piece of Plate, and hide it in my Pantry or Diſpence, where I kept my *Padrons regalos*, and other neceſſary proviſion; alleaging, that my this means himſelf and fellow-ſervants ſhould again be received into favour. *Soto's malice againſt Guzman, and his plot to diſgrace him.*

The Page liked well this motion; and having that day a fair opportunity, he took up a silver Plate; and lifting up a little board, hid it in one of the sides of the Galley.

When the Cloth was taken away; going to gather up my Plates in a Basket, as my custome was, I missed one of them: and when I had searched every corner, and could not finde it, I presently published my loss, that it might be the sooner recovered. My Master and the Captain did at first believe that some of his own Servants had done it, to disrepute me: but my two Enemies *Soto* and the Page reported, that abusing my Masters favours, I had stoln and conveyed it away, that others might be blamed.

The effects of hatred.

This Traytor the Page, advised my Master, because I had not as yet gone out of the Poop, to search my Pantry; which he ordered to be done: and finding it where themselves had hid it, they came with great joy, proclaiming, That my Villany was apparent, and that none but my self could possibly hide it in that place.

My Master having taken me in the negative, this confirmed his suspicion: and the *Alguazils* Servant was commanded by the Captain, to give me fifty stripes. These my Master freed me from, begging my pardon, because it was my first offence; advising me withall, that if ever I committed the like Crime, I should be severely punished.

After this, I was much discontented; knowing, that he that had done me this wrong, would doubtless finde occasion to do me a far greater injury.

I entreated the Captain and my Maſter, to acquit me of this imployment, and that I ſhould be obliged to them, to return me laden with irons to my Bank. But they were the more earneſt, that (though againſt my will) I ſhould ſerve and attend there all the dayes of my life.

One evening when my Maſter came from the ſhore, (as my cuſtome was) I went to take off his Cloak, Sword, and Hat; and give him his Sea-Gown and Cap, which was of green Damask; for theſe I had alwayes in readineſs.

Another plot of Soto's againſt Guzman.

The ſame night, I know not how, unleſs by the Devils means, the Hat being fallen down from the place where it hung, I found it without the Band, which was very rich, and ſet with large Gold Buttons.

I ſearched for it, with the greateſt diligence in the world; but to no purpoſe: for the Hat-band would not appear.

When I acquainted my Maſter with it; *Ah!* (ſaid he) with a frowning countenance, Now I know thee to be a Thief: I know thy deſign, and that thou ſeekeſt new occaſions to deſert my ſervice: thou ſhalt have daily a thouſand baſtinado's about thy ſhoulders; nor ſhalt thou ever ſerve any other Maſter in the Galley but my ſelf.

I had not power to reply, ſo great was my grief to be charged with a Crime whereof I was innocent. And if to juſtifie my ſelf I had ſpoke Goſpel to them, they would have no more believed me, then *Mahomet* the Prophet of the *Turks*.

When by no means the Hat-band could be found, the Captain commanded the *Alguazil*

to beat it out of me, and not to desist till I had confessed the Theft.

I suffered with admirable patience above three hundred stripes, which made the blood gutter down from my back and shoulders; it seeming to my Master, that my cruelty in permitting my self to be thus whip'd, was greater then his, in commanding it to be done: yet at last, moved with compassion, he caused me to be carried away. Then did they chafe my body with salt and wine-vinegar, which was greater torment then the other.

Some few dayes after, my Master asked, if I would restore the Hat-band: and because I could not produce it, his Servants haled me out of the (a) *Dispensilla*, resolving to beat me to death, rather then suffer me to enjoy what I had stollen. Then did I know what it was to be a Galley-slave; and, that not my self, but my service was respected.

(a) Or a place where provisions are kept.

They fastened Cords to my wrests, and drew me up with a pulley, where I hung in the Air; which was a terrible torment to me. At last they let me down, not to release me, but to lay me on my back cross the Canon which was in the fore-Castle; beating me so cruelly on the belly, that I wanted but little of death.

His cruel punishment

But the Captain fearing he should be accountable for me to the King, if I should die with his extraordinary punishment, commanded to have me carried to my former lodging, to be cured.

By this meanes I was esteemed such a Notable Rogue, that I would rather suffer all the rigour of their Whipping, then lose the

the intereſt of this my ſuppoſed Theft.

They told the Boatſwain he ſhould never pardon me when I did offend; but puniſh me in thoſe ſins that were venial, as if they had been mortal: and he, (who durſt not do otherwiſe) did chaſtiſe me with unaccuſtomed blows; ſometimes becauſe I did not go to ſleep at due hours: or if, to ſupply my wants, I ſold my allowance of meat or bread to others, I was ſure to be laſh'd for it.

My Bank was neereſt the Poop, and therefore the moſt painful, as being ſubject to the inclemency of the weather in Summer and Winter. To my cuſtody were committed all the iron implements: I was to ſpin the Hemp, whereof the ſmaller cordage were made for the Galley; to ſweep, and make clean the Decks, and to be common Swabber; and of all ends of Rags, Flax, Tow, or Ockame, to make wads or wiſps for all that came to the Long-houſe: and this was the utmoſt of all miſeries, as being the meaneſt and baſeſt office in the Galley.

Soto my Comrade came to the Galleys to preach Repentance to the Moors. He had been the greateſt and moſt remarkable Thief of his time, either in all *Italy* or *Spain*. Being informed that our Galleys were to range along the coaſt of *Barbary*, he intended with the aſſiſtance of ſome Moors and other Slaves that were of his faction, to revolt, and carry the Galley, either to *Algier*, *Tunis*, or *Tripoli*; for which purpoſe, he and they were already provided of ſome weapons under their Banks. But becauſe the Cordage, Cables and Sails, were wholly committed to my charge, he was forced to acquaint me with

Soto attempts to carry the Galley into Barbary.

the design; supposing that this business would be more welcome to me then any man, because I was condemned to be a Galley-slave during my life. *Soto* desired to confer with me himself; but wanting an opportunity, he sent a trusty Messenger unto me, desiring my reconciliation and favour, and that I would joyn with him to procure our freedome from this cruel slavery wherein we lived. I returned this answer to the Moor, That it being a very weighty business, and of great hazard and danger, I desired some time to consider of it.

The execution of this, was deferred till Saint *John Baptists* day in the morning.

Guzman discovers the rebellion of Soto, and the rest of the slaves.

The day before the appointed time, I requested a Souldier of his acquaintance, to tell the Captain, that I had a business that concerned his Majesties service, and my own life and honour. The Captain commanded me to be brought before him: where in his presence, and the rest of the Officers, I revealed the conspiracy. They were amazed at my relation, and blest themselves; thinking that I had invented this, to procure some Mercede or favour from the Captain, and that I might be freed from part of my great labour. But when I told them where he should finde their weapons, and by what means they were brought thither, he gave thanks to God, who had delivered him from such eminent danger.

He ordered a Gentlemen, who was Captain of a Squadron, to make diligent search about those Banks that were suspicious; where according to my information they were found.

Presently there was a Process thundered forth

again

againſt all the Offenders: and becauſe the day following was a great Feſtival, and very ſolemnly obſerved amongſt us, their puniſhment was put off till the day following: and the Captain bidding one of the Sea-men make ſhew of the Flags and Streamers; A neſt of Rats was found in the Cheſt, and amongſt other things my Maſters Gold Hat-band.

Soto deſired to make confeſſion of his ſins before his death, to one of the Friars we had on board. He begged my pardon and forgiveneſs, for the falſe Witneſſes he had ſuborned againſt me, about the Plate and the Hat-band, ſaying, that his purpoſe was, when they had been Maſters of the Galley, to have ſtabbed me: ſo great was his malice againſt me, that nothing but my death could ſatisfie him.

He and two of his Companions, that were the Head and Chief of the Conſpiracy, were condemned to be drawn in pieces with four Galleys; and ſeven of the other were hanged: which ſentence was executed: and all that were found guilty, were condemned to the Galleys for term of life, being firſt publickly whipp'd on board the ſeveral Galleys. The Moors had moſt of them their Noſes and Ears cut off, that by this Mark they might be known to be Rogues upon Record.

This exemplary Juſtice being paſt upon the Conſpirators, the Captain ſent for me, extolling my good nature, innocency and loyalty; deſiring me to forget his former ill uſage, he commanded my irons to be taken off, and gave me leave to walk at my pleaſure about the Galley, till the Kings Royal *Schedula* ſhould be procured for my abſolute

absolute discharge; which no sooner arrived, but I was set at liberty.

And here (*Gentle Reader*) I put a point to my Misfortunes, which are truly summ'd up. Thou mayest expect more, if I do not exchange this transitory life, for one that is Eternal; which is the Hope and Life of the Faithful.

FINIS.